Heart Duel

JeTi (G-bender ManSica)

***Prologue***  
  
  
  
  
“Umma!”“Jesse, run!!”“No! I won’t GO without you, mommy!”“Here! Take this!”“What is this?!”“This it’s my most treasured medallion, you father gave to me when we married. And I promise that as long you are wearing this, I’ll always be close to your heart…doesn’t matter where I am.” The little boy nodded in tears as his mother hugged him tight. She broke the hug suddenly and kissed his forehead lovingly:“I will always love you, darling! Now, run! And don’t look back! Go!”The woman watched with tears in her eyes as her son step back hesitantly, yet he looked at her for the last time and runs between the darkened woods. While the little boy was running aimlessly, he abruptly stopped when a sharp noise cuts his heart:\*BANG\*His eyes filled up when he heard his mom’s scream and a sinister laugh. Feeling weak, he grabs his medallion tight and yells already bursting in tears and everything was turning into a huge blur:“UMMA!!!”...  
  
  
  
-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-x-  
  
  
**Chapter 1**  
  
  
\*GASP!\*  
  
A sweating guy abruptly seated in his futon as he was trying to regain his breath after an intense dream. Seeing that he still was in his room, he sighs deeply and wiped his forehead as he muttered:  
  
“\*PANT\*  
  
It was…. that same nightmare again…” He burrows his face in his hands and seeing that his insomnia attacked once again, he rapidly stood up as he rushes to the training room:  
  
“It will be good taking this from my head for awhile…”  
  
~\*~  
  
“Oh, I’m seeing that you already are awake. Good morning, Jesse.” An old man wearing his black kimono flashed a smile to Jesse as he was kicking the punching bag repeatedly and soaked in sweat. The latter stopped abruptly as he bowed his head politely and answers seriously:  
  
“Good morning, Master Lee.” The old man smiled as he placed a tray with breakfast in front of Jesse. The latter thanked, but he frowned his eyes confusedly when he realized a letter with a peculiar seal inside the tray. He looked to his master doubtfully and the latter just smiled and nodded his head as he was giving his permission. He carefully grabbed the paper and analyzed the emblem attentively. In a snap of fingers, a fragment of his memory flashed in his mind as he heard yells and saw terrible images… He shakes his head quickly and ruptured the seal as he read the letter’s content attentively:  
  
“Congratulations! You were invited to the World Fight Tournament known as The Duel. You were summoned to test your skills in a fight combat beginning in two days. The tournament will be localized at Jeju Island and if you don’t attend to this invitation, you will be disqualified automatically. If you become victorious, you will won the prize of $100.000.000,00 wons and will be labeled as the most powerful fighter in the world. Our ship it’s waiting for you in Busan’s Harbor. Don’t be late, remember… time it’s precious.D.”  
  
Jesse looked back to his master apprehensively and before that he could ask, his master places his hand in his shoulder and uttered wisely:  
  
“I think you should go, Jesse.” He stared his master confusedly as he blurters:  
  
“But master, your health! You need my assistance… I don’t know if i…” The old man chuckles and tapped Jesse’s shoulder:  
  
“Jesse… You need pass through these walls and see the world from the outside. I know that you are strong, I had training you all this years and frankly, there is more power in you that you know… But the most important… that I believe that you’ll find more answers of your past in this trip and as I can see, you recognized this emblem… just trust in words of an old man.”   
  
Jesse took a deep breath and pondered his thoughts attentively. After some seconds, he looked back to his master confidently as he nodded his head in agreement:  
  
“Yes, master. I’ll find out the truth behind my nightmares… and my past…” The old man smiled and nodded his head in agreement. Jesse quickly stood up as he rushed to his room to prepare his luggage for the interesting trip.  
  
~\*~  
  
In the next day, by the morning while he was saying his last farewells to his master, the latter told him a last advice as he placed his hand in Jesse’s shoulder:  
  
“Boy…I know you will found some news experiences in this trip, but the only thing I ask its…when it comes the time… don’t let the anger or fury take over your heart… always dominated your emotions, understood?” Jesse nodded his head hesitantly as he heard the old man once again while the latter chuckles a little:  
  
“Another thing… I don’t know why I’m telling you this but… whenever it comes a unique opportunity to you… don’t let slip away of your hands. Remember we just have one life. Farewell and stay strong, Jesse!”  
  
“Yes! Thank you, master!” Jesse nodded and waved to his master while he was walking away from the dojo. Suddenly, he turn around when he heard a yell:  
  
“And don’t forget to search for my granddaughter! She will help you as well!” Jesse looked to behind for the last time and thanked his master with an honest smile. Before that, he rushed to Busan’s harbor where “The D-Cruise” already was anchored in the harbor. He came to aboard and whispered to himself as he was holding his medallion and staring the wide blue sea:  
  
“I think I’ll have some surprises in this tournament...”  
  
~\*~  
  
The ship’s travel was peaceful to Jesse until another noisy fighters come to aboard; he took a deep breath and shakes his head as he held tight his bag’s loop trying to contain his annoyance. Soon, he left the deck since the place was filled with loud-mouths and arrogant muscular men. He found a peaceful spot in the prow as he took a deep breath, smelling the sea air and exhales as he held the ship’s grids. Unconsciously, he caressed his medallion and closed his eyes as he whispered:  
  
“Mom… I miss you… please, guide me…”  
  
…  
  
“AISH! I already told you, let me go!”  
  
A sudden scream breaks his trance as he quickly turns around. He was slightly shocked to see a girl with purple hood and wearing a fight suit, around his age with black long hair. The poor girl was trying to flee from some insistent thugs, but the gang surrounded her along with some sinister smiles in their faces. Soon, Jesse raises his eyebrow and muttered to himself slight angrily:  
  
“How come they let such cheap guys in this tournament?” Even watching the girl trying to run away from them, he watched the scene attentively since he was incredibly interested in this woman, yet he was ready to charge against these thugs anytime. So, even trying to get free from them, the girl wasn’t scared a little bit; back to the latter, a tough thug suddenly held her wrist and talked with a sly smile in his face:  
  
“Awww come one, don’t be like this, honey! I know you want some –“  
  
\*HARD PUNCH\*  
  
The thug suddenly spins in the air, completely dizzy from her strong punch right in his face. He was trying to get up hopelessly as his comrades were bursting in laughter of his state. Jesse couldn’t help to chuckles amusedly to himself as he whispered quietly:  
  
“Hmm… she has guts…”  
  
“Arghh! I already told you! Don’t touch me with these dirty hands, you jerk!” She said with a confident smile in her face as she rubs her hands nonchalantly. The though thug was in the floor holding his broken nose with some blood dripping from his nostrils. He snarled angrily and clumsily stood up as he charged madly against the girl:  
  
“Your little h-“  
  
\*HARD KICK\*  
  
“!!!” The girl was with her mouth hanged open when an unfamiliar blond guy stood before her and kicks the thug’s face right in the square, yet she couldn’t see his face since his back was facing her. However, an unknown feeling of safety fills her heart as she heard the guy talking indifferently:  
  
“Did your mom already told you that you can’t hurt a lady?” Jesse said coldly as he crossed his arms and glared the thug intently. The girl was staring at him bewildered and surprised to see this guy jump from nowhere and save her life. The thug just fainted with such a kick in his face, yet his comrades started to groan and charge madly against the duo:  
  
“Darn you!!!” And another one fell into the ground after Jesse kicked in his chin into a swift move; yet another one dashed against them. Jess averts the strike with such facility as he step back against the thug and give an efficient jab in his nape, another knocked out. When he was about to turn around and talk with the girl, he heard an angry shout:  
  
“Arghhhh! You--!!” As soon he turns around, he founds another guy knocked out and the girl brushing her hands confidently. He smiled subtly at the girl’s skills and slowly walked to her direction. The latter was with her head down as she was analyzing her outfit, then she sighs heavily as she realized that her hood was ripped and muttered sadly:  
  
“Aish… it was my new hoodie…” Soon, she raised her head with her eyes closed and in a snap of fingers; she removed her coat, only staying in her black t-shirt. Jesse halted immediately as he lost his words, completely agape with the girl’s stunning beauty:  
  
“Oh my God… she is beautiful… I never saw someone like this…”  
  
Then, she loosens her pony tail and ruffled her own hair as she opens her eyes slowly. However, her reaction wasn’t different from Jesse since suddenly she widened her eyes and felt her face burning as she was in awe with the gorgeous guy before her:  
  
“Wow… he is a hun—Oh God what I’m thinking?!”  
  
She quickly shakes her head, trying to mask the visible blush in her cheeks. Then, she quickly clear her throat and extend her hand for the guy and couldn’t help to smile along with her cute eye-smile:  
  
“Thank you for save me…Oh by the way, I’m Tiffany, Tiffany Hwang. Nice to meet you.” Jesse still was dazzled with the girl’s beautiful eye-smile; he couldn’t help to stare her blankly, just admiring her smile. Then, after some seconds, Tiffany stared him strangely, but she chuckles heartily with his spacing out expression:  
  
“Hello? Are you there?” She waves at him and finally gets his attention. Seeing that he was caught, he quickly shakes his head and answered quietly… with his heart pounding madly under his chest:  
  
“Oh… I’m sorry. I-I’m Jung Jesse. Pleased to meet you too, Miss Tiffany…” He answered politely as Tiffany suddenly smiles warmly and asked coyly:  
  
“Hmmm…Can I call you… Jessi from now on?” He stared her puzzlingly, yet a smile crept in his lips as he admits:  
  
“No one ever called me like that…but… I like it… Jessi…”  
  
She widened her smile and nodded her head in agreement. Soon, she reached his arm and dragged him around the ship as they were talking loudly… well, to be honest, most loudness coming from Tiffany’s side. Yet, he was totally curious… and completely enchanted with the girl’s bubbly personality. He couldn’t help to feel his heart swaying whenever he saw her incredibly smile and her brown eyes directed to him:  
  
“What it’s happening with me? I’m feeling so… different…”  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 2**  
  
  
Jesse, well… now so called Jessi… the latter was quietly accompanying the eye-smiling young woman known as Tiffany; he wanted to guarantee the girl’s safety until they were able to get back to the deck. Meanwhile, Jess couldn’t help to feel extreme comfortable with this new girl, even when the latter couldn’t stop talking, he only could listen and nods his head coyly about her remarks or sentences. Originally, he was the kind of person who is very quiet or cold about strangers… However, he couldn’t deny that this girl could make him feel very different and he wonders why?  
  
When they finally were able to reach the deck, suddenly an odd pair came to their direction since they were staring Tiffany with wide eyes. As soon they crossed their paths, the duo dragged Tiffany abruptly to the corner and leaving Jess for behind, just staring at them quizzically. She yelps loudly while they stormed her with worried questions. Then, a tall and tanned girl shakes Tiffany’s shoulders and asks loudly:  
  
“My God, Fany-ah! Don’t you know how worried we were?!” Tiffany was staring the girls puzzled and she turned her attention to the short one:  
  
“What Sooyoung is talking about?! I’m out just for… twenty minutes?!”  
  
The short and dorky one shakes her head hopelessly and cross her arms:  
  
“Fany, Fany, Fany. Don’t know that we are a team? How you would feel if we suddenly disappear without tell you where we were going?! Now tell us what happened!” Tiffany pouted since her mate had a point, so she nodded her head and sighs deeply to the girls:  
  
“Sorry Tae-Tae… Sorry Sooyoung-ah… I just needed a fresh air, so that’s why I went to the prow... but just when I was finally refreshing a little… a couple thugs started to annoy and mess with me…” The duo gasped in response as they blurted worriedly:  
  
“And what you did?!” Tiffany smiled cockily as she crossed her arms and shrugs her shoulders dismissively:  
  
“Well… I have to deal with them of course… aha no sweat, but when I thought I was able to get them all, the big one of them popped from nowhere and almost got me…\*gasp\*… OMG! I forgot!” She quickly turns around and found Jess staring her blankly; then, she rapidly runs to his direction and offering a embarrassed smile, she drags him to her friends as she scratches her head coyly for forgetting the poor guy to behind. The girls stared at her expectantly and smiled when they found the poor guy blushing slightly as Tiffany smiled widely and presented him:  
  
“Girls… this is Jung Jessi… he is the guy who saved my life from those stupid thugs… if it wasn’t for him… I don’t know what would happen with me…” The giant and the short one bowed their head with a smile as the Jessi greeted them seriously:  
  
“Jung Jesse… pleased to meet you.” He added with a serious, yet soft semblance; the girls were in awe thanks the guy’s beauty, not just because of his looks, but because of his innocent eyes. Suddenly, Taeyeon whispers to Tiffany’s ear along with a teasing nudge:  
  
“Omo… Fany-ah… where did you got this one?! He is h—“   
  
“Shhh! Quiet! Could you turn off your byun mode now?! Thanks!” She adds wryly as the duo was smiling lamely at him and teasingly at a blushing Tiffany. Since they were trying to cover their comments, yet Jesse couldn’t help to look at them suspiciously. Then finally, Tiffany clears her throat and motioned to her friends to present theirselves as well:  
  
“Nice to meet you, Jeshhe. I’m Kim Taeyeon!”  
  
“And I’m Choi SooYoung, nice to meet you too. Oh! I almost forgot! Btw, we didn’t present ourselves as a team yet…” SooYoung nodded with a smile to her mates as they posed and yells in excitement: “Together we are…The Girls Generation Team!”  
  
Suddenly Jess stares at them blankly and finally chuckles at their remark as he nodded his head in agreement:  
  
“Nice to meet you, ladies. I’ll looking forward to see your skills and fight style.” They bowed their head with smile in their faces after his remark. So, Sooyoung puts her hand on the chin and asks curiously as she approaches of him:  
  
“Now… tell us. So you did take care of our mate, huh?” Jess pursues his lips nervously and shakes his head at Sooyoung’s comment as he replies truthfully:  
  
“To be honest… she really was able to deal with those thugs by herself. Yet, I must admit that it can be dangerous for anyone of us stay alone in this ship. Your friends are right, Tiffany-shi, please… don’t walk alone around here and take care of yourself.” Tiffany couldn’t help to feel warm at his honest words and concern, even when she didn’t know the reason or she wasn’t used to this kind of treatment. However, while her mates were spacing out with the guy in front of them; suddenly, Taeyeon blurted as her face darkened while she adds wryly:  
  
“Fany! I forgot to tell you… the guy \*moron\* that you calls boyfriend… he was looking for you earlier…” Suddenly, Tiffany snaps from Jessi when she heard the word ‘boyfriend’ and nibbled her lip in anxiety; she quickly turns her attention to the short one and speaks in a whine:  
  
“Tae, I already told you… don’t call Taec-oppa like this. He is just… busy with his training. That’s why he couldn’t show up earlier…” Tiffany adds with a sad voice as her comrades were annoyed with the guy’s name. Then, Sooyoung hissed but yells as she crossed her arms:  
  
“Come on, Fany-ah! We know that you deserve someone better than him! I agree with Tae! If it wasn’t this guy here, only God knows what could happen…”   
  
While the trio was discussing about the new information, Jess couldn’t help to feel an ache in his heart when he heard the word ‘boyfriend’. He unconsciously frowned sadly when suddenly a good looking guy shouts for Tiffany’s name and runs to her direction, giving a tight hug. He watched everything sadly from a far while the couple was talking:   
  
“Fany! Where you have you been?! I was so worried!”  
  
Tiffany became flustered as she still was in the guy’s tight hold, so she utters coyly as she pouted and crossed her arms:  
  
“Oppa! I went to prow to look for you! But since you disappeared… again! But tell me… where you been?”  
  
Tiffany stared him seriously and her boyfriend was sweating slightly and gulping deeply. Yet, she wasn’t able to decipher the clear signs of uneasiness in his face; so he tried the best to not stammer as his explains while her friends were staring him suspiciously:  
  
“Bu-but that’s why you didn’t found me, because—erm because I was looking for you in everywhere in this boat, but you weren’t in nowhere!” Tiffany was staring him intently as she finally let a deep sigh and uttered:  
  
“If it wasn’t my new friend…Oh! Btw, let me introduce you guys! Jessi--- Jessi?” When she Tiffany turns around, Jess wasn’t nowhere in sight; she furrows quizzically, yet sadly for not even say a ‘thank you’. Taecyeon stared at her bemusedly, but she quickly shakes her head and talks in a quiet tone:  
  
“It’s nothing… i-i… I’ll tell you later…” “Where did he go?” Taeyeon and Sooyoung looked to each other amusedly, yet they shrug their shoulders as Taecyeon smiled in relief and drags Tiffany:  
  
“Ok then… now, let’s get back… I was missing you, honey.” Tiffany snapped from her thoughts and nodded her head with a weak smile as her friends and boyfriend was walking before her. She couldn’t help to turn around once again and whispers hopefully:  
  
“I hope I can see you again… Jessi.” With that, she left the room and she wasn’t able to hear his reply as he was behind the wall with eyes closed and heavy weight in his chest:  
  
“Me too…I’ll be looking forward…”  
  
-----  
  
Some minutes later, the D-Ship finally reached the Jeju Island’s beach; soon, each contestant got their luggage’s and followed the orders of the “Duel” staff to go to the arena. Meanwhile, Jess walked through a large corridor as he was agape when he arrived in the duel’s arena where all the fighters were concentrated. He found a way to the back of the great arena and he quietly observers each one of the competitors; some look alike extreme skillful as at the other side, it was a lot of cocky and loud mouth fighters. Suddenly, he found his heart doubling the pace when not very afar from him, Tiffany’s came to his view…However, his awe expression turned into a frown when he found the Taecyeon guy hugging her from behind as the girl was blushing and smiling at his caress:  
  
“Of course… she already has a boyfriend… Aish! What I’m thinking?! This is not of my business! I just came here for on purpose... nothing else…”   
  
However, he couldn’t deny that the scene was hurting his heart, and even more when he couldn’t help to glare Taecyeon fiercely… for some reasons, he didn’t trust in this guy. Then, when he still was watching them, all the conversation and noise suddenly ceased when a storming voice came to his ears:  
  
**“Welcome to the World Fight Tournament … The Duel! And I’m your host… call me… Mr. D.”**  
  
Unconsciously, without any explanation, Jess felt a huge headache as his memories came to his mind, making feel uneasy and absorbed again. “Why this voice it’s so familiar?” He asks as he stared the really strong and tall man in the arena’s balcony; Jesse could feel a powerful, yet dark aura around this host and one thing he couldn’t help to feel curious was a huge scar in the man right cheek. Jess’s fists turned into fists instantly unknowingly; so his train of thoughts was stopped as the man known as D, it was giving the rules and commands:  
  
***“In Duel Tournament, we have 2 essentials rules: First, you aren’t allowed to kill your opponent and second, weapons are strictly forbidden in the arena. Now about the duel system… first of all, I would like if all the fighters grab your invitations and read the sign in the letter’s invitation right corner…”***  
  
Jess rapidly reaches his invitation and realized that indeed, there is a code in the corner. He reads the code and furrows confusedly: “A-4? But what this supposes to mean??” and it was when, D. started his explanation:  
  
**“I know all of you might be confused about the code, but here is the explanation: the letter means which group you will be and the number means your classification. For an example: We have the numbers to 1-8 and the letters A-H, if you got the code A-1 and another fighter got A-2, that means the first it’s sealed. Since them both are in the first group and will fight with each other. So in the Group A and in the others groups, the number 1 and 2 will fight against each other and it will the same thing to 3-4, 5-6 and 7-8. I believe that everything its clear now…”**  
  
“Hmmm… so that means I’m one of the firsts to fight in this tournament…” While Jess was thinking deeply; Mr. D makes a last remark before leave the balcony:  
  
**“One last thing… since the tournament will start in two days; all fighters can use this free time to use our training room or have some rest. That’s all for now, see you in the tournament.”**  
  
With that, Mr. D turns around to leave, yet he slightly widened his eyes and suddenly, a huge sinister smile formed in his lips as he stared Jess in the corner. The latter was completely unaware that he was being watching; then, Mr. D laughs mysteriously as he left the room with one thought in his mind:  
  
“Jesse, Jesse, Jesse…you grew so much… everything it’s like I planned...”  
  
-----  
  
After the concentration in the arena, each contestant received a card-key for their respective room, so Jessi as well. As soon he unload his luggage in his room, he decided to take a little nap and try to forget the previous happenings… his mind was wondering with who was this so called Mr. D and why Jesse felt so uneasy and angry only to look at him? Well, in another hand, he couldn’t stop thinking about the girl he meet earlier…only to remind her kind semblance and warm smile, his heart pounded abruptly. He quickly shakes his head in dismay and burrows his head in his pillow as he utters her name unconsciously before drift to sleep:  
  
“Tiffany…”  
  
~\*~  
  
A couple hours later, he jolted in his bed as he was dreaming with the same nightmare… that he was running in a dark forest and he heard his mother yell cutting the air, followed by a storming voice and sinister laugh. His bang was soaked due his sweat as he was panting hard; after realize that he was alone in the room, he close his eyes and took a deep breath as he tried sleep again. However, no use since he was really restless; then he decided to advance his training since still was afternoon…  
  
He calmly left his room in his training outfit (sport white pants and jacket, along with a black t-shirt); when he was about to walk in the hall, he heard an unfamiliar voice and greeting:  
  
“Oh hi. You must be my neighbor.” Jesse quickly turns around to found a guy with a smile in his face and extending his hand for a handshake. Jess looked at him puzzled, yet he hesitantly grabs his hand for a brief handshake as the guy introduced himself warmly:  
  
“By the way, I’m Kim HeeChul. Nice to meet you and you are--?”  
  
“Jung… Jess, same here…” And then, the mood died since Jess wasn’t a specialist in conversation or even keeps one. Well, even that he wanted keep his mind busy with some training, he couldn’t be so rude with the guy who started a peaceful chat with him. That it was when HeeChul decided to talk again:  
  
“How come I never saw you around here before?” Jess snapped from his thoughts and shrugs his shoulders as he answers honestly:  
  
“No wonder since this it’s the first tournament what I ever joined… and you?” Suddenly HeeChul laughs heartily and answers:  
  
“Well… to be honest, this it’s my fourth time in this tournament…I tried to obtain the Best Fighter Title, but I can’t even pass through the finals… But I’m not giving up!” Jesse couldn’t help to chuckle at the guy’s determination. Then, he taps the guy’s shoulder and adds wisely:  
  
“You are right, that it’s the spirit. Now, since you already know this place… could please tell me where is the training room? I’m kinda lost here…” HeeChul smiles widely as he taps his shoulder friendly and speaks while they were walking down the hall:  
  
“Of course! I was going there too! Come on, I’ll show you the place!”  
  
~\*~  
  
As soon they reached the training room, Jess became agape, the place was huge! And with a lot of equipments with high tech; even training in his humble dojo; he couldn’t ever imagine such a great place like this. Thanks to HeeChul, Jess was able to stay out of trouble since his new ‘neighbor’ was giving information’s about the fighter’s profile. Yet, something was missing… since before Jess couldn’t concentrate thanks the yells and loudmouth contestants inside the large room. Suddenly, his sight captures a curious scenario outside the window; so he turns his attention to HeeChul and asks curiously:  
  
“Hey, Kim… what it’s that place over there?” Heechul narrowed his eyes to a better vision and snaps his fingers as he reminds the place:  
  
“Oh that place? It’s just some greenwoods… I guess… well, to be honest, no one tried to go there since that place isn’t patrolled by the Tournament’s Staff… but why did you ask?” Unconsciously, a smile formed in Jess’s lips as the gears of his mind started to work and he quickly answers absentmindedly:  
  
“Oh… nothing… just for curiosity” “There is the place I’m going… I’m sure” With that, he rapidly turns around and taps HeeChul’s shoulder in gratefulness:  
  
“Thanks for the tip, HeeChul. See you later.” At the same time HeeChul was puzzled with Jess’s actions, he couldn’t help to chuckles at the guy’s curiosity as well…  
  
As soon Jess left the room, he didn’t lose a second to rush to this ‘forgotten place’ to start his peaceful training. He wasn’t afraid since he was a skilful fighter and he stopped right before the huge forest to take a good look. Then, he took a deep breath and decided to go on, completely unaware that he was being watched. Each step inside this forest, he was feeling like he was close to his home since the dojo was surrounded by lives trees and a warm natural environment. Suddenly, when he felt a sound like waters descending, he smiles in result as he quickens the pace. With the sound turning in something more clearly; with a last step, a beautiful, yet small [waterfall](http://www.google.com.br/imgres?q=jeju+waterfall&um=1&hl=pt-BR&sa=N&tbm=isch&tbnid=fxvH58y4zd24mM:&imgrefurl=http://www.123rf.com/photo_5374362_famous-chunjeyun-waterfall-of-jeju-island-in-south-korea.html&docid=gTSwdK7bdw7plM&w=1200&h=849&ei=5R0uTru4JeO50AG2xOCmAQ&zoom=1&iact=hc&vpx=710&vpy=330&dur=936&hovh=189&hovw=267&tx=137&ty=139&page=5&tbnh=150&tbnw=192&start=46&ndsp=12&ved=1t:429,r:7,s:46&biw=1024&bih=667) came to his sight. So he smirked in relief and not wasting time, he quickly removes his jacket and rushed to the water as he whispers to himself:  
  
“It’s [*perfect*](http://www.google.com.br/imgres?q=jeju+waterfall&hl=pt-BR&sa=X&tbm=isch&tbnid=334eL8yq7rriQM:&imgrefurl=http://www.thelensflare.com/gallery/p_waterfall_8181.php&docid=Hd7jjOyQKJk7WM&w=375&h=500&ei=zRwuTv5Yqq3QAdH28NUB&zoom=1&iact=hc&vpx=784&vpy=296&dur=4630&hovh=259&hovw=194&tx=101&ty=199&page=2&tbnh=156&tbnw=116&start=10&ndsp=12&ved=1t:429,r:3,s:10&biw=1024&bih=667)”  
  
~\*~  
  
Meanwhile, some minutes earlier; Tiffany decided to do the same thing and go to the training room since her boyfriend disappeared… again. She couldn’t deny that she was slightly upset for this reason since she wanted passes more time with him, even when the latter was always absent… Yet, another part of her was really worried with the previous scene in the ship… her mind still was racing like mad due the surprising encounter…She found herself looking unconsciously to each fighter, hoping find Jessi… her hopes were fading away when the sun was setting and she utters sadly:  
  
“I wasn’t even able to thank him properly… Jessi…”  
  
However, when she was lost in her thoughts, yet she immediately snapped when she realized that Jessi was right before her, just a few meters away. When she rubs her eyes to see more clearly, and when she realized that he was in front of the abandoned forest, she watched him quizzically as she utters:  
  
“What is he going to do?” After that, she became curious and worried about the fact he disappear in front of her eyes as he entered in the huge forest. Then, she nibbled her lower lip in concern as she mumbles to herself:  
  
“My God… where is he going? Aishh… I can’t leave him alone… who knows what might happen?”  
  
Even reluctant that the fact she is a girl, yet a strong one, she was about to enter in this unknown forest to find a guy that she barely knows… but why she is so worried then? It was something that she couldn’t explain, just do it. So she take a last look in this deep forest, and whispers to herself before take a deep breath:  
  
“God… please don’t let me find some bugs on the way…”  
  
After that, she runs to inside the forest. So, while she was running under the huge trees, she started to run even more when she couldn’t find him. Some minutes later, she started to feel concern about herself since she didn’t had any idea where he could be and the worst, she was lost... Tired of the whole running, she pants heavily as she places her hands in the knees and tried to recover her breath:  
  
“Afff… where he could it be? Come on, Jessi, please show up!” And suddenly, a sound like some waters, followed by a familiar voice caught her attention. When she runs into the sound’s direction, she abruptly stopped when she found an old dead stem blocking the path, the thing that she could pass with a great facility, but she couldn’t since the trunk was covered with nasty bugs. She quickly covered her mouth to contain her yell as she shudders unconsciously; then, she rapidly looks around to found another way to pass trough and breathes in relief when she found a tree not very tall before her.  
  
Then, starting climb up the tree, the sight of the waterfall came clear to her eyes. And it was when she gasped in awe when she found Jessi in the lake training using the tai-chi chuan technique with his eye closed and body completely… wet. As much this could be considered as a stalking, she couldn’t help to stare at him totally absorbed by his graceful moves and… his physic as well, she couldn’t deny that he was really slender, yet muscular. Yet, trying to hold her ogle expression, she became completely stunned when suddenly, the water under him started to turn in ice, but she couldn’t see very clearly due her distance…  
  
However, when totally mesmerized by his moves, she found a way to go further in the tree’s branch and watch him more plainly. She was in awe with this scene, definitely it was something that she never saw before; meanwhile, she was completely unaware that a ladybug was walking in the branch and then, into her right arm. She frowned her eyebrows when she felt some tickles in her skin; then, when she broke the stare to take a good look of her arm… She shrieks immediately with her eyes widened as she felt her skin shuddering of nervousness:  
  
“KYAAAAAAAAAAAA~~~~”  
  
Since she was busy trying to get free from the insolent bug, she accidently lost the balance of the branch and her hand wasn’t able to catch the wood in time…Due the height, for sure it would be something to be worried about. She firmly shut her eyes, silently praying as she was waiting the hard fall on the cold floor… she became stupefied when she felt two warms, yet strong arms held her safely. When she was confident to know the reason that she didn’t fall, she peels her eyes one by one only to stay speechless to the sight before her. Jessi was holding her safely in his arms since in the last second; he was able to prevent her fall as she landed in his secure grip. She became momentarily mesmerized when she found his soft and worried eyes staring her as he asks in awe with Tiffany still in his hold:  
  
“Tiffany-shi?” She blushed at his warm voice, so she could only lower her head and answers timidly or embarrassedly:  
  
“\*chuckles nervously\* Hi Jessi…”

**Chapter 3**  
  
  
  
“Hi Jessi…” Tiffany had to keep her head lowered since she already knows that her face was blooming red of embarrassment or maybe… because she was too flushed to be caught in Jessi’s arms right in time…she couldn’t deny a strange feeling of safety dwelling in her being when she was so close of him. Nevertheless, she quickly broke her train of thoughts when his soft voice and expectant semblance caught her attention; seeing that she still was in his arms, she blushed madly once again and rapidly straighten herself to stand up correctly as she laughs nervously one more time:  
  
“Are you all right, Tiffany-shi?” While he was staring her worriedly, she felt her heart pounding like mad. Then, grabbing her temples, she slight shakes her head to jerk one thought of her mind:  
  
*“Aishh… those eyes… those innocent and melting eyes… arghhh what I’m thinking about?! I already have a boyfriend and I love him very much…”* She immediately freezes when she felt a callus, yet warm hand touching her shoulder. A gulp formed in her throat when she found him in front of her, still staring her concernedly; once again, one thought runs to her mind:  
  
“Did i… really do?”   
  
“Tiffany-shi, are you really all right? I’m afraid that the fall may shocked you… do you need anything?”  
  
Then, the spaced out Tiffany quickly shakes her head as she speaks nervously:  
  
“Nah… I’m fine, Jessi, really... and thank you for catching me in the last second… if it wasn’t for you… I would reach the ground flatly…”   
  
She managed a chuckle when she realized he furrowed his eyebrows in concern. Then, gazing each other expectantly, Jessi slowly begins as he scratches the back of his neck coyly:  
  
“Of course I wouldn’t let yourself hurt… but Tiffany-shi… can I ask you something?” Tiffany gulped and nodded her head as he started carefully with his eyebrow raised:  
  
“What are you doing here? Don’t you know how dangerous can be for a lady like you walk in this forest… and alone?”  
  
Tiffany hissed slightly with his serious words, but she was able to realize clearly that his remark was filled with concern and maybe… some care and not some cold or harsh words… She stayed like mute as she was trying to give a good excuse since she was kinda ‘stalking’ him: “*Yeah…of course I’ll tell him…I’m sorry Jessi, I was stalking you and by the way… you look really hand… Omg! What am i thinking?!”* Seeing that he still was waiting for an answer, she let a big sigh since she didn’t have choice beyond to say the truth. So taking a deep breath, she simple utters without break the stare:  
  
“Jessi… I’m sorry to barge into your privacy like that… it’s just I was looking for you since this morning. You kinda suddenly vanished that time and I even wasn’t able to thank you. So, when I saw you running to this forest, I was worried and I decided to follow you.” Jess was taken aback by her words; he felt his heart swaying a little when he heard her honest words. He looked at her warmly and utters softly:  
  
“You were worried… about me? But how you weren’t afraid of me or to come here alone? And on top of that… to trust me since we meet only today?” Unconsciously, a bright smile formed in her lips as she tilted her head to her side and adds in a wise tone:  
  
“I know this can’t make any sense, but… I can’t help to feel safe around you… I mean… it’s like we meet for so long already… Definitely if you wasn’t a good guy, you wouldn’t save my life twice today…Besides… when I look into your eyes, I can see how that you have a good heart.”  
  
Jessi was simply wordlessly with her brief explanation, with a few words, she was able to reach the point fully. He already was spacing out with her shining eye-smiles since it was even more beautiful thanks to the moonlight. He quickly recomposed himself as he heard her giggling of his blank face; then he averts his eyes to the side as he tried to hide his blush. Then, staring her once again, he makes a last remark:  
  
“I understand that…and I really appreciate your observation. But… I still don’t understand why you were atop of that tree, Tiffany-shi…” This time, Tiffany was the one who scratches the crown of her head embarrassedly as she explains quietly:  
  
“Well… to be honest…I didn’t find it another in and the tree was the only way to have some access of where you would be. But suddenly a bug started to walk in my arm when I was watching you training and ---!!!” She gasped suddenly as she widened her eyes in realization; then, she quickly looked above Jessi’s shoulder to find… the water?! But wait a minute! This water was transformed into ice some minutes ago…right? While Jess stared her confusedly, he careful asks:  
  
“Tiffany-shi… what are you looking for?” With her mouth slight open, she started to sputters the words as she appointed to the lake and Jessi frenetically, making the poor guy even more confused:  
  
“Yo-you! An-and water—ice and wa-water again?! HOW DID YOU DO IT?!” After paying attention in her confusing, yet cute sentences, Jessi couldn’t help to chuckle with the hyper girl right in front of him. So finally understanding her, he extends his palm in front of her and simply asks:  
  
“Oh. You mean… this?” This time, some ice dust started to form in his palm and suddenly, a small ice spiral aroused from his hand. A smile formed in his lips as he realized the amused look in the girl right before him; Tiffany was really fascinated with such beautiful power, she simply couldn’t stop to look, it really was beautiful. Then, since he consumed a lot of his energy in his training, he closed his hand and the ice spiral was absorbed into his skin once again. Unconsciously, Tiffany still in awestruck, she grab his hand and became amused that his hand wasn’t cold anymore. When she realized what she was doing, she quickly snapped from her trance and both of the blushed madly when they still was holding hands. They quickly removed away and Tiffany chuckles nervously as Jessi lowered his head in embarrassment. When she recomposed herself, she whispers as a matter of fact as she looks at him in awe:  
  
“You are an Elemental Manipulator… but I thought they were extinct…”  
  
Jessi raised his head abruptly and stared Tiffany deeply as he asks expectantly:  
  
“How did you know about this term and this skill? I mean… only others Elemental Manipulators would recognize this technique…!!! Wait a minute! … Yo-you ???”  
  
He appointed her surprised as he realized the truth. Yet, Tiffany stared at his deeply and managed a weak smile and utters sadly:  
  
“Well… \*sigh\* I never used my true Elemental Skill in the tournament or even in the runoffs since I wasn’t able to summon my true power…”  
  
Jessi steps close to her and asks softly: “Why not? I mean… you are quite strong. I just saw with my own eyes…”   
  
She chuckles at his warm words and shakes her head as she stared at him directly. She raised her hand between them and sighs as she admits in a bitterly voice:  
  
“The truth it’s… I studied the Elemental Skill since I was a child, but I never was able to go on my training since my master told me once that my skill it’s involved with my feelings, since I didn’t know how to control them… I disappointed everyone, even my family… this supposed to be a family’s gift… but I still can’t managed it. Then, after my parents died when I was only with ten years…and I decided to lock my feelings inside of me again. That’s why I trained hard a lot of different martial arts to fulfill this lack of Elemental Skill…” She took a deep breath and forced a smile as she sniffed with her eyes slightly moistened due her tears:  
  
“You must be thinking that I’m failing right now, isn’t?” Then, he placed his hand in her right shoulder and looks deeply in her eyes and softly explains:  
  
“I never told that you were a looser… and I’m sorry about your parents… But, you can show me what you learn?” She nodded her head in appreciation and felt much confidence fills her heart; soon, she keeps her hand raised and one a blink on an eye, a small sparkle… better, and a brief flame formed in her palm and runs to her fingertips. Jess stared her hand in awe, but he snapped from his trance when the flame vanished suddenly. He tilted his head to take a better look of the disappointed girl; it seems that she needed a comfortable word. So he cleared his throat as he caught her attention and almost felt his heart melt when he saw her gloomy semblance. He wasn’t very good to cheer anyone since he was really quiet, but he would do anything just to make her feel better:  
  
“Don’t worry, Tiffany-shi. You still can invoke your power, this it’s a huge step... You just need work a little more in your emotions… it seems like you stays tense or too much absorbed while you execute your skill. This might be what it’s blocking your manipulation.” Tiffany stared at him in awe as he was able to describe her major difficulty; but then she furrows her eyebrows in confusion when she saw a little grin in Jessi’s lips as he held his chin and speaks with a serious voice:  
  
“Tiffany-shi… would you like if I could be your…trainer?” Tiffany gasped slightly with his words, she heard right? He wanted to be her trainer? It would be amazing to have such skilful teacher and atop of that, such amazing person…Soon, he was staring her expectantly as he adds wisely:  
  
“We could start tomorrow if you want?”   
  
“YES! OF COURSE!”  
  
Tiffany quickly nodded her head with a huge smile in her face, still in awe as he was able to discover her necessity. Then, she couldn’t contain her happiness as she started to bounce in her spot just like a happy kid; he couldn’t help to chuckle at the girl’s excitement, yet he automatically stiffed when he felt a warm hug and followed by a gentle voice:  
  
“Thank you, Jessi! You are the best!” She innocently retrieved from the hug and keeps smiling at him, feeling truly grateful to his help as she bowed her head. Then, she adds as she places one finger in her chin, thinking:  
  
“And it will be great since my first fight will be only in the next week!”  
  
However, he barely heard her sentence since he was spacing out and too flushed after this sudden… yet warm contact. A smile creeps in his lips as he realized that she was really happy. Yet, he frowned worriedly when he realized the hour in his watch, so speaks softly to the cheeky girl:  
  
“Yes, tomorrow we will have a though day. Come on, you need some rest.”  
  
She nodded in agreement with a smile in her face and together, both of them left the forest to take their deserved rest. While they walking back to their room and enjoying their conversation, they weren’t able to realize a pair of eyes still was watching them attentively. The person who was following them, smiles slyly and whispers still staring the pair:  
  
*“Hmmm… so this guy is the one who boss was talking about… Hahaha he looks strong… and hot. HAHAHAHA THIS WILL BE INTERESTING!”*  
  
The woman vanished in the air into a violet cloud with her devious laugh filling the air…  
  
-----  
  
Mr. D was in his huge and hazy office while he was staring the display in front of him. A huge smile formed in his lips as he was analyzing the fighter’s profiles and then, Jess’s profile came to his view. He laughs sinisterly as he stared the display with Jess’s pic:  
  
“Ha… so it’s really you, Jesse… boy, you grew so much hahaha you have the annoyed face like your father…”  
  
Suddenly, he noted another presence in his room and he stops his laughing to ask the intruder with a sly grin in his face:  
  
“Narsha… report.” The woman a.k.a Narsha, aroused from the office’s corner and came to his view as she stood in front of his huge desk. She crossed her arms and cocked her head to her side as she speaks into a saucy tone:  
  
“I already follow him as you ordered. It looks like he ventured himself in the abandoned forest in the south of the island and only came back now.”  
  
Mr. D intertwined his hands and supported his chin as he asks sternly:  
  
“Is that all?” Narsha shakes her head and talked into an annoyed tone:  
  
“No… its looks like he was with another fighter this time… I couldn’t say since I didn’t enter in that forest…”  
  
He raised his eyebrow in curiosity and speaks quietly:  
  
“And who would be the another one?” Narsha sighs heavily and walk to his side as she taps some keys and the display shows Tiffany’s face. He raised his eyebrows amusedly and laughs mischievously:  
  
“Ahahhaha looks like the little Jesse already found a girlfriend...” Narsha rolled her eyes and speaks:  
  
“So, sir… can I make my move now?” The tall man stood up from his table and wandered around his office as he speaks into a lurid voice:  
  
“This won’t be necessary… for now… we will only watching them. First I want to see how much he improved… If he received the same skill of his father… this tournament won’t be in vain” Suddenly Narsha seated on the chair and asked amusedly:  
  
“Is he really the one, sir?”  
  
Mr. D smiled slyly and nodded his head in agreement as he held his chin to talk into a malicious voice:  
  
“Yes…Finally I will be able to fulfill my plan… HAHAHAHAHAHAHHAHAHA!”  
  
------  
  
In that same night, after Jesse left Tiffany in her room, he laid on his bed and sighs deeply:  
  
*“God… what it’s happening to me? I’m not used with these feelings…”* Eventually, he drifts to his sleep with Tiffany in his mind… and dreams.  
  
In the morning, he quickly shot his eyes open when he heard a loud bang in his door. He lazily looked to his alarm clock aside his bed and jolted in surprise when the display’s showed 10 AM. He quickly stood up from the bed as tried to found his shirt:  
  
“Coming!” He yelled against the door as and scolded himself madly:  
  
“Ya Stupid! I was supposed to meet Tiffany one hour ago… oh Gosh!”   
  
Seeing that he wasn’t able to find his shirt, he sighs heavily and turns the knob to speak:  
  
“I’m sorry I was… Tiffany-shi? Hello? Are you there?” He waved his hand in front of Tiffany’s eyes since the girl was kinda… dazzled with the gorgeous view before her… He was even more stunning without his shirt, Tiffany thinks… Yet, she tried to push the thought away from her mind as she once again, blushed madly with the slender and muscular guy before her:  
  
“Oh… God…” She quickly shakes her head as she heard his call again; so recovering from her trance; she averts her stare to the ground in embarrassment as she mumbles cutely:  
  
“I’m sorry Jessi… I was waiting for you for one hour already and thanks to your neighbor… I could find you. I’m sorry again for coming like this…” He softened his voice due the beautiful sight before him, and then he speaks quietly as he pulls her inside of his dormitory:  
  
“I’m the one who should ask your forgiveness. Tiffany-shi, please wait here while I’ll refresh me up and get some stuffs ok?” He adds as he gently placed in the seat of the small room. She unconsciously smile with his care, she never found such a kind man just like him. So after some minutes, he came back with his training suit and holding a small backpack as he says with a smile in his face:  
  
“So… ready for your first day of training?” She opened a huge smile and prompted:  
  
“Yes, master!”  
  
They laugh to each other and soon they left his dorm. However, while they were chatting in the midway, Jess realized that Tiffany was checking her phone constantly and every time she looked at the display, she sighs deeply and pressed the end button. When he was about to speak, accidentally his eyes landed in her display where he read ***“Taecyeon-oppa ID”***. Instantaneously, a slight sharp pain hit his heart as he frowned unconsciously. Seeing that Tiffany was distracted, he took a deep breath and speaks seriously:  
  
“Tiffany-shi… can I ask you something?” Suddenly Tiffany shot her head up, and looked at him expectantly:  
  
“Huh? Oh… sure, Jessi. What’s wrong?” He took a deep breath and tried to speak more nonchalantly that he could, but eventually his voice sounded a little gloomy:  
  
“Do you have sure that you still want train with me?” She creased her eyebrows confusedly and nodded her head with a smile:  
  
“Of course, Jessi. Why I wouldn’t?” He sighs and averts his stare to his side as he speaks quietly:  
  
“I think your boyfriend wouldn’t like if you were training with me and … alone… I don’t want you get yourself in trouble because of me…” She stared him blankly, yet she chuckles at the sullen guy right her side as she brush his bangs playfully:  
  
“Don’t worry, Jessi. We are just training and we are friends, right? Besides I don’t have his explanation to him since… he disappears the most part of time or… he doesn’t care…”  
  
Jesse has to hold his tongue to prevent his inner thought: “Only an idiot wouldn’t care about you.” Or “We are friends…” he supposes to be happy to find a new friend, but when it come Tiffany, why this word hurts his heart? So, recovering himself, he speaks:  
  
“I see…but listen… he would be a fool to not worry about an incredible lady like you.” Suddenly, Tiffany felt content and warm with his honest words. She eye-smiled and thank him and they proceeded in silence, but enjoying the other’s presence and a slight tint of pink in their cheeks. What Jessi didn’t knew that as soon he left Tiffany in her dorm in the previous night, Taecyeon already was waiting for her inside her room. Tiffany closed her eyes briefly to recall the happenings:  
  
***[FLASHBACK]*** *As soon she turn the knob and enters in her room, she smiled to herself to remind her encounters with Jessi. It was funny the fact that they only met today, yet she felt like she always had know him. But, she abruptly jolts in surprise when she felt two arms around her waist followed by some rough lips in her neck. She widened her eyes in shock and quickly turn on the light to see the stranger; when she turn around, she finds Taecyeon with an odd semblance as the latter speaks with a cocky smile:  
  
“Hey, babe” She creased her eyebrows and eyed him suspiciously as she quickly untangled of his arms. He step closer to her and asks confusedly:  
  
“What’s wrong, babe? You never say no to my arms before…” He said dryly as he raised his eyebrow to Tiffany. The latter gulped madly as he was cornered her against the wall, when he was about to trap her, she quickly deviated from him and stood to his side, talking into a mad voice:  
  
“You are really funny, oppa… you are always disappearing from nowhere and suddenly you came to me like if nothing happened…don’t you think I didn’t realize it? Your escapes? Your excuses? It’s almost like if you were cheating me…”  
  
Immediately, his eyes widened and he gulped heavily as he was almost caught. Tiffany crossed her arms with an angry semblance as he tried to defend himself:  
  
“But… honey I was… training, we already have this conversation before. You know I must do my best, right? I wouldn’t ever look for another girl beyond you, babe.” For some reason, Tiffany felt uncomfortable with his words, and on top of that, she was tired for another discussion. When she realized, he already embraced her again and was kissing her neck. If it was some days ago, she would forget this conversation and give in to his touches, but what made her feel different today? She couldn’t comprehend her own feelings, but the only thing that she wanted, it was some space. So she slowly untangle from his arms as she recomposed herself and pointed to the door:  
  
“Oppa… I need rest; I’ll have a tough training tomorrow. We can talk about this another time. Good night.”  
  
Taecyeon tried to step close to her but she step back as he says or begs:  
  
“But… babe—“  
  
“Good night, oppa.” She adds sternly as she was staring him directly. So he rolled his eyes and shakes his head as he grabs his jacket roughly and finally left her room. At the moment the door was close with a loud bang, Tiffany took a deep breath and seated on the couch as she burrows her face on her hands:  
  
“What it’s happening with me? I never treated him like this before… hmmm maybe I’m too tired, but this doesn’t mean that he is hiding something from me… Aish… what am I going to do?”****[END FLASHBACK]***  
  
“Tiffany-shi?”  
  
“Huh?!” Snapping from her thought, Tiffany shot her head up as she realized the scenario around her. Jesse was staring her worriedly, so he speaks while he puts his bag close to a tree:  
  
“We already are here.” Tiffany nodded without utter any word, seeing that this was uncommon, he placed his hand on her shoulder and asked in concern:  
  
“Tiffany-shi, are you sure that you want train today? You seem worried about something.” Tiffany smiled assuredly a little due his concern and utters:  
  
“No… its everything fine, I just need take some things out of my mind, that’s all…” He chuckles and nodded in agreement. Tiffany couldn’t help to admire the guy’s smile, even which in the first time they met, he didn’t smile that much, but today he is smiling often. She must admit that his smile passes a peace and relief to her heart, sometimes is better to know someone to unload yourself beyond family and friends, right? However, while the meticulous guy was adjusting everything for their training, she couldn’t help to ask curiously:  
  
“Hey, Jessi?” The guy hummed as he was with his back facing her. She swayed on her foot as she asked amusedly:  
  
“Why you are so respectful with young ladies like me?” He turn around and creased his eyebrows in confusion as he didn’t understand her question. So she chuckles and reformulated her remark:  
  
“What I wanted to ask… why you talk so respectful? I mean, I’m believe that I’m not older than you and certainly, you don’t talk like the guys around your age…”  
  
“Is this a bad thing?” He asked coyly, in response she eye-smiled at him and quickly waved at him as she adds:  
  
“Nonono not at all. This is nice actually… Well, I’m 22 and you look around 24 or 25. I think we should drop the formalities, since we are friends, don’t you think so?”  
  
He placed his hand on the chin and pondered his thoughts as he nodded in agreement, then he sighs and admits:  
  
“I have 23 to be exact… and I’m sorry about this, but my mom teaches me to be always respectful with ladies.”  
  
A huge smile crept in Tiffany’s lips as she stared the guy in front of her, he was really innocent, cute and respectful, definitely this is a rare kind…So she approached from him and utters truthfully with a warm smile:  
  
“Wow… your mom was very wise to teach you that, I would like to meet her one day…” Then unconsciously, Jess grabs his medallion and seriously responds:  
  
“She died when I was 8 years old…” Instantaneously, Tiffany’s smile dropped as she creased her eyebrows sadly and honestly speaks:  
  
“I’m sorry, Jessi.” He grinned assuredly and shakes his head:  
  
“Don’t worry, this was long time ago, it wasn’t your fault anyway.” She felt a great relief after his sentence. Then, when the silence surrounded them once again, she speaks curiously:  
  
“Jessi…could you call for my true name? You have permission, besides… I would like if you call me like this.” She says as she fidgets her hands cutely. He chuckles at her child-look and flashed a smile as he utters softly:  
  
“Let’s begin our training…*Tiffany*.”  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 4**  
  
  
A few minutes passed after Jesse told his last sentence; Tiffany was staring the guy attentively as he was making his stretching. Five minutes passed and she still was asking to herself completely confused about his next step since he didn’t gave an order… yet. However, his smooth voice breaks her trance as he softly calls her name:  
  
“Tiffany-shi—I mean \*ahem\* Tiffany...” She slightly glare at him after she heard him calling “Miss Tiffany”; yet watching embarrassed and looking down coyly… it was something really adorable. He shakes her head while she chuckles and let him finish:  
  
“Er… before I start the real training… there is something I would like to do it…I believe that a test would be proper for the occasion.” Tiffany creased her eyebrows in confusion and tilted her head cutely to her side:  
  
“A test?”  
  
Of course his heart leaped abruptly with such lovely view. He covered his amazement with a slight cough as he averts his side to his left and tries to continue into a nonchalant voice:  
  
“Yes, a test, because I’ll be able to identify your combat level and then, see which step we will take to proceed your training, understood?”  
  
She pursued her lips still doubtful and asks slowly:  
  
“So… what will be the test?” Instantaneously a frisky grin crept in his lips as he simply adds still with his eyes completely focused on her and cracked the bones of his neck:  
  
“A fight… between you and me… that will be your test.” Immediately, Tiffany doubled the size of her eyes at the second that she heard the ‘fight’ word; she couldn’t fight with Jessi… she didn’t want to hurt or confront him. Her breathing stated to get deepen as she shakes her head in denial and pleaded:  
  
“Bu-but Jessi! I – I don’t wanna hurt you! Can-can we make another test?” Suddenly Jesse chuckles and shakes his head as he approached from her. He smiled assuring and speaks seriously:  
  
“Tiffany… you won’t hurt me… this isn’t a real battle. It’s just that the only way to see how skilful you are and I promise that no one will get hurt, trust me.”  
  
She lowered her head as she was pondering her thoughts; after some seconds, she took a deep breath and made her mind. Even with her head down, she nodded and Jessi smiled gratefully with her answer; he gently tapped her shoulder and walked away from her. Now, standing before her, he took of his white sweat jacket and tossed close to their bags, leaving his torso covered with his black t-shirt and white sport pants. He moved himself into his fight position with his right arm extended into her direction while his left arm was lowered; and he placed his left leg slightly bended as he stood still in his posture. Then, Tiffany slowly raised her head and meets his soft stare; she sighs heavily as she positioned herself too with both fists at the same height of her chin. They held an intense stare as suddenly, Jess’s lips twitched into an assuring grin; just then, he motioned his extend arm, giving her the signal that he was ready…  
  
However, after a sudden silence, Tiffany took a deep breath and she finally moved, better… charged against him… when she was getting close of him, he abruptly vanished in the air. She almost lost her balance when she only punched the air; she quickly looked to her side, but no signs of him. Her breathing started to become deeper as in a matter of seconds, she felt a presence behind her followed by that same smooth voice close to her ear:  
  
“Come on, Tiffany. I know you are faster than that…”  
  
She creased her eyebrows in confusion, but quickly turns around to find only air again. Then, he shows up in front of her, yet only a few meters away and speaks:  
  
“Show me what you got!”  
  
Automatically, she shouts in frustration as she charged against him once again: “Yaaaaaaa!” This time, he didn’t vanish, but he stood still as he was waiting for her attacks. Tiffany started to punch and kick him multiples of times, yet he managed to evade gracefully in each blow as he defended himself. He internally smiles as he watched her determined face each time she tried to ‘strike’ him; yet, he frowns again as he felt in her hits that she still was holding herself. So this time, he had to make her fight for real; between their fight, he managed to speak while she was focused into his moves:  
  
“Tiffany! Don’t hold yourself! I trust you… now you have to trust in yourself!”  
  
It was amazing the power of his words; Tiffany felt so secure at his honest demand and a new sparkle started to burn in her heart. He was counting with her and she couldn’t let him down: “Thanks, Jessi…”; after she thanked him in her mind, she felt her body burning and soon she managed to keep the pace with him. Her strikes turned more precise and fast; Jesse immediately smiles as he was satisfied with the result of his words. He keeps defending her attacks, but something unexpected happened; he got the feeling that they were being watched, so he quickly turns his eyes to a vague silhouette behind the high tree. When he changed his stare to Tiffany again, he slightly dropped his jaw in shock when he saw a powerful fist against his face:  
  
“!!!”  
  
**\*HIT\***  
  
Jesse suddenly felt dizzy with the punch’s strength as he lost his balance and fell into his buttocks. Instantaneously, he clearly heard a loud gasp followed by a worried cry:  
  
“OMG! I’M SO SORRY, JESSI!”  
  
Tiffany quickly dashed to his direction as she abruptly kneeled into the ground, right beside him with her tremble hand covering her hanged open mouth. With only her desperate and loud banging voice, Jess finally recovers his conscious in what really happened; he creased his eyebrows in confusion and slowly touches his nose with his fingertips. He became amused when he touched something wet, bringing his fingers close to his eyes, he dropped his jaw once again when he saw blood in his fingers, thanks a cut in his nose. He quickly looks to his left and find Tiffany bowing her head repeatedly as she was pleading and asking for his forgiveness. After he stared her with his blank face, he chuckles and raises her head gently by his finger in her chin. The moment that they stare meet, she blushed at the proximity and the fact that she still was embarrassed to hurt her ‘teacher’ in the first day of her training.  
  
Following the silence, she continues her pleads: “Jessi! I’m so sorry! Please, please forgive me! I didn’t want to hurt you!” He shushed her softly as he slowly seats properly and she quickly assisted him; after he was settled, he placed his hand in her shoulder and starts with an assuring smile:  
  
“Tiffany… you don’t have to apologize, it was part of our training…but see? Isn’t a big deal”  
  
“How can you say that!? I hurt you and your nose is bleeding because of me…” She furrows her eyebrows in frustration and pouted sadly like a child. He couldn’t help to chuckle once again of her antics; then he shakes his head and manage smile weakly:  
  
“You have my word that you didn’t hurt me, besides I’m kinda relieved that happened…”  
  
She widened her eyes and stared him completely puzzled: “What?!” He took a deep breath and explains while he looks into her eyes:  
  
“Because now I know how strong you are…I already knew it, but I had to be sure… You only need more trust in yourself.” She slowly nodded her head after the information sink in, he was right… she was very insecure about her owns skills and strength even after her heavy training through the years. No one ever was able to read her like the way he did, she was really impressed with the fact with short words, and he described her fully. However, she snapped from her thoughts when she saw her trainer before her having a hard time to clean his wound. She couldn’t help to feel guilty and at the same time weakly smile with the cute guy in front of her, he was like a child… naïve and pure…  
  
Then, she positioned herself and quickly reached her small towel in her bag and moistened with fresh water. Now in front of him, she giggles heartily and furrows her eyebrows while she raises her hand and slowly, she cleans his wound after the latter sighs in defeat, since he didn’t wanted to stain her cute towel. She huffed at his act and he quickly gave in after he realized her serious glare as he obeyed like a puppy. He lowered his head, but the blush was slight visible in his cheeks when she held his cheek safe in place and carefully brushed the soft tissue in his face; trying to cut the silence, she speaks into a soft voice:  
  
“No more fights from now on, ok?” He couldn’t help to smile at her concern; she was really kind and gentle. So he answers at the same soft voice:  
  
“Yeah, I wouldn’t like to mess with someone like you…” After a brief second, both of them stared to each other and suddenly, they broke in laughers. They recomposed theirselves; Jessi couldn’t seize the feeling in his chest or his fast heartbeat every time that Tiffany touched his face so carefully. She couldn’t deny that she was feeling odd things in her being, some feelings that she never experienced before… something different… but pleasant. However, they decided that it would be better to take a small break to recover their energies for the real training. Yet, Jesse couldn’t help to feel bothered about the silhouette that he saw behind the tree… or what he thinks so, but for the good, he always listen his instinct and stays alert…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
“Pheww… that was close… he almost got me…” Narsha says as she was regarding her breath after run away from the forest. Just like her boss told her, she should watch every single step of Jesse, but without any kind of interference since they wanted to know what their aim was doing. She took a peek in the pics that she took of Jesse and Tiffany and suddenly, she smiles slyly while eyed the picture:  
  
“I wonder how Taec would react when he saw his girl flirting with another guy… hahahaha!”  
  
…  
  
Some hours later, the couple ended their make out session while Taecyeon stood up from the bed and grabs his pants. Narsha stared his back from the bed and reminded her interesting subject. In a curious voice, she starts:  
  
“Don’t you know where your lovely girlfriend is?” Suddenly Taecyeon turn around and finish pulling over the zip and stared at her confusedly:  
  
“Why are you talking about? Don’t you remember that we have this stupid fight yesterday?” She smiled smugly and seated as she pulls the cover to her chest; Taecyeon seated on the bed with his back facing her and sighs heavily:  
  
“I don’t know what it’s wrong with her… I mean… she never resisted me before…” Narsha wandered her fingertips in his back which made him turn around to face her; then, she grabs the pic in her nightstand and slowly placed in his palm as she continues:  
  
“I don’t know the true reason, but… I think this picture it’s a start…”  
  
Taecyeon stared at her confusedly, but when his eyes took a good view of the picture, he widened his eyes in fury while he gritted his teeth in anger. Feeling mad, he hit the wall with his knuckles as he stormed off:  
  
“What is the meaning of this?! She is cheating on me?!” He yelled madly as he stood up and Narsha stared in curiously; while he groaned loudly, he hastily grabs his jacket, ready to open the door:  
  
“I’m gonna kill that bast--!!!” But her touch in his shoulder makes him slow down; he turns around with a refrained anger and warned:  
  
“Narsha… let me go…” She shakes her head and slides her finger in his chest to his abs as she whispers:  
  
“Calm down, dear… she isn’t cheating you… yet…” She laughs boastfully as she shakes her head with the sight of his mad furrows, so she explains:  
  
“Our boss has great plans for him… and coincidently, he clearly shows a deep love interest for your girlfriend and her… well, this will take some time…” Taecyeon grunted loudly and quickly snapped:  
  
“And your point is?!” She laughs at his impatience again and finishes:  
  
“He is the reason that our boss created this tournament… just to find him. And now he is here, we need hold him for awhile until everything it’s settled for our plan. And that it’s the part of your cute girlfriend you play the main role… she will be the responsible to low his defenses and busy him even without know…”  
  
“So are you saying that I should stay seated and wait for this Jesse guy make out with MY girlfriend?!”  
  
Narsha shushed him abruptly as she wrapped her arms around his neck:  
  
“What is the difference? You are making out with me? Why don’t you let her have fun with the blondie and you stay with me? Besides… I’m not the only who you have fun all the time or am I wrong?”   
  
He then, calmer, sighs deeply and shakes his head in denial:  
  
“Because she is mine! And if I can’t have her… no one will!”  
  
“See? You only are obsessed for her… this isn’t love…but be careful…if you don’t wanna lose her, at least keep the eye on the blondie.”   
  
“So… until when do I have to support this?!” She smiled after he sighs in defeat:  
  
“Don’t worry, darling… after our plans are over… you can do anything you want with that guy...” A creep smile formed into Taecyeon’s face as they stared to each other into a sinister grin. Not too much after that, he pulled her by her waist and crashed his lips into her own as they walked into the bed’s direction once again. She smiled in ecstasy while he glided his lips in her neck and soon, they started another session…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The sun was setting and their training still was progressing. The pair was seated on the ground with their back leaned into a huge tree and panting heavily since they had a massive struggle for hours. After they recovered a part of their energy, they started to talk while they rest before call this a day; with the end of their conversation, Jesse and Tiffany felt theirselves enjoying the welcoming silence between them while they watched the beauty of the sunset.   
  
Suddenly, Jess who was staring the calm lake before them, he decided to stood up and walk to it until the water reached his tights. Tiffany stared him confusedly as she creased her eyebrows, but then she become puzzled when he turn around with a soft smile indicating her to join him. Without thinking, her body moved fast than her mind as she found herself walking to his direction and stepping in the water. With the water reaching her tights as well, Jess smiled dissolved when he turn his eyes to the small waterfall before them into an attentive stare. Tiffany joined into his focus and suddenly he started to utter slowly:  
  
“Do you know that the water it’s the better place for a training?” He finishes his sentence as he looks back to her, only to find her tilting her head to her side and staring him in confusion, but expectantly like if she was anxious for his answer. The corner of his lips twitched as he explains softly:  
  
“Look at it… the water flows steadily, but peacefully into a same motion. Doesn’t matter the huge amount of new waters coming, in the end… it would still be calm and peaceful…but…” He stopped briefly and raises his right arm to hit the water, in result to create a small wave that diminished their reflection momentarily. Tiffany still was staring him attentively as he steps a little closer and speaks:  
  
“But when something bothers us, this is what happened inside of us…for years I tried to dominate this and particularly, I manage to control my feelings and strength the most part of time…” He looked at her warmly and placed his hand in her left shoulder as he whispers:  
  
“You have a great power right here.” He said as he points to her heart and continues:  
  
“But sometimes you are so focused into set right that you forgot the real meaning to be yourself… the mistakes and the right times makes part of you, so that’s why you are here… to learn at first, to deal with yourself…” She was agape that no one ever could describe her with such precision that he was doing now, she felt completely transparent as she let him give a full lecture about her own being. Then, a smile crept in his lips as he finishes:  
  
“Tiffany… you are here to learn, just like me… we can fail sometimes, but the most important it’s to relieve your concerns to see that you aren’t alone in this one and… when you want someone to talk… I’ll be right here.”  
  
“…Thank you, Jessi… this really means a lot for me…”  
  
She couldn’t contain the smile in her face as his words made her feel so good and so secure with herself. She only managed to add her eye-smile as she stood there, just admiring his wise words and assuring expression. How come someone so young could be that wise? Well, this was a question that soon or later, for sure she would found out…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
At night, Jesse decided to accompany Tiffany to her dorm since it was late and both of them were deadly tired, good thing that their dorms were close to each other, precisely at the same floor. They were chatting warmly and laughing about the previous incident as Tiffany still was apologizing with Jesse, when they finally reached Tiffany’s door, the latter turn around and smiled to her ‘master’. Once again, a tint of pink formed into his cheeks as he lowered his head timidly. He heard her let a big sigh and he furrows his eyebrows in confusion as he softly asks:  
  
“Is there something wrong, Tiffany?” She pouted guiltily and shakes her head cutely:  
  
“I feel guilty for bother you… tomorrow it’s your first fight and you should be training or even resting…” Suddenly he couldn’t help to chuckle at the girl’s concern, then he adds as he taps her head playfully making her pout even more:  
  
“Easy…I was the one who gave the idea for your training right? Besides, I trained with you and even that I haven’t done… it was pleasant to help you and stay in your company. As I said, I’ll be right here when you need me ok?” Now it was Tiffany’s turn to blush at his comfy words as she stared her feet and cleared her throat. Looking back at him, she saw him scratching his cheek cutely as if he was embarrassed and he adds with a smile:  
  
“Well…at least I was able to give an important hint and I know you will be fine if I won’t be around here…” She furrows her eyebrows and asked worriedly:  
  
“But why you wouldn’t?” Suddenly, he laughs and placed his hands in his pockets:  
  
“Well, tomorrow it’s my first fight, remember? So I’ll be only able to continue if I win the battle. \*Chuckles\* If you don’t mind, I would like if you wish me a good fight, you know, just for luck.”  
  
She laughs at his words and suddenly, her semblance turned into something serious as she placed her hand in his shoulder and utters genuinely:  
  
“I’ll wish, but not for luck, coz’ you don’t need it… but for your safety. So you better come back safe, understood?”  
  
He flashed a truthful smile at he felt the true meaning of her words, or better, her concern… feeling more confident, he smiled gratefully and he slightly bowed his head in respect as he finally speaks:  
  
“Thank you, Tiffany… good night and sleep well.” They held a brief stare and he turns around to leave, yet he smiled when he heard:  
  
“Good night, Jessi. Be careful tomorrow!” He couldn’t help to turn around and smiled once again as he meet her eye-smile. With that, he walked down the hall and disappeared from her sight. She stood here still watching the spot that he was, her smile still was in her face as she opens the door and enters in her dorm. She leaned into the wood door, still thinking into her whole day; she was completely amazed with her new friend, he was so mysterious, but so kind and wise, for sure he was one of a kind, she thinks…  
  
“Ah! There you are! We are looking for you the whole day, Fany-ah!” Taeyeon yells waiting for an answer for the young girl, but when she was about to ask again, she catch a glimpse of the genuine smile in Tiffany’s face. Feeling mischievously, she raised her eyebrow and asked into a curios tone:  
  
“Well well well, what we have here? Someone it’s smiling a lot lately!” Suddenly when Tiffany heard those words, she gasped slightly and coughed abruptly as she tried to cover her flushed face:  
  
“What?! I can’t even smile?!” Taeyeon started to laugh at the girl’s defense mode and it was when Sooyoung popped from the kitchen with bread into her mouth, she asked loudly:  
  
“Whfffwhat muff did I muff miss?” Taeyeon walked into the tall girl’s direction and leaned against her as she utters nonchalantly:  
  
“Nothing… I’m just saying that our dear friend here it’s smiling a lot lately, don’t you think so?” Realizing what Taeyeon was talking about, Sooyoung swallowed the bread abruptly and put a sly smile in her lips:  
  
“Yeah… is there something about that blondie friend… what it’s his name anyway?” Tiffany rolled her eyes and sighs heavily as she was feeling embarrassed and explains, better, sputters her words:  
  
“His name its Jes-Jesse ok?! And he is only a friend!” Taeyeon bit her lips as she tried to hold her laugh of a blushing Fany, so she raised her hands in defense and answers coolly:  
  
“Right…But who is the one that disagree with you? And I’m just saying that you look happier, that’s all…right, Choi?” The giant nodded her head with a naughty smile and adds as she crossed her arms:  
  
“Totally...” Tiffany took a deep breath and seated in her couch as she burrows her hand in her face and speaks into a defeated tone:  
  
“Ya! What are you guys want? Only to mess with me? He is a very nice guy ok?” Not wanting make her friend more annoyed, Taeyeon walked into her direction and strokes her hair playfully:  
  
“We live at the same dorm, remember? But yeah, we were waiting for you to say that tomorrow we will to the arena to watch the fights.”  
  
“Are you coming with us? Since we are fighters too, we can use the loges! This isn’t awesome!? We will watch that god-likes fighters… whohooo!” Sooyoung sang dreamily as Tiffany and Taeyeon laughs at the girl’s antics. Taeyeon looked at her watch and pulled the giant:  
  
“Yeah yeah come on! Now we have to sleep well, tomorrow will be long day! Fany, are you coming?” Tiffany looked at her while was thinking deeply in something, so she snapped from her trance and adds with a smile:  
  
“You guys can go ahead, I’ll be there soon.” Taeyeon and Sooyoung smiled and replied with an “Ok and good night”. While the odd pair was walking to their rooms, Taeyeon couldn’t help to take a glance of Tiffany and whispers with a sly smile in her face:  
  
“I don’t know what happened with her, but…I’m liking this Jesse guy already…” Sooyoung chuckles and whispers amusedly:  
  
“Yeah, he better treat our dear Fany properly or he will feel our wrath!” Taeyeon laughs and ends her sentence:  
  
“I think it won’t be necessary… I just want her to forget that jerk and find someone who really cares about her…” Sooyoung pursued her lips and suddenly a lamp pops in her head as she got an idea:  
  
“Hey... what do you think to give him a hand?!”  
  
“What are you talking about?” Taeyeon asked doubtfully, but smiles naughtily when she understood:  
  
“My friend, I think we have a mission here… first of all, we must get know that guy and know his intentions with Fany and then, she will be free of the jerkTaec…” They shake their hands as a seal of their mission while Sooyoung adds:  
  
“I just hope he is better of Taec… I don’t wanna see Fany suffering anymore…” With that, they nodded their head in agreement and reached their beds for a good night of sleep.   
  
Some minutes later, Tiffany walked to her room where her friends were sleeping already. She lifts her covers and laid on the mattress; placing her head in the pillow with millions of thoughts in her mind. But then, a smile formed into her face as she finally close her eyes:  
  
“Thanks, Jessi… tomorrow I’ll be in the first row cheering for you.”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Jesse found himself in the locker room and stared his own reflection in the large mirror; he smiled to himself as he was wearing the attire that his master gave at him. He placed his hand in his own fabric and thinks:  
  
“I’ll take care of your attire… thank you, Master Lee…”  
  
“Wow, nice costume you got here!” Jesse snapped from his thoughts when his ‘neighbor’ greeted him; he turn around and answers with a smile in his face:  
  
“Oh, hi hyung… it was a present…” HeeChul smiled and nodded his head; the latter already was in his fight costume as well. He crossed his arms and asked curiously as he leaned in locker:  
  
“So… are you nervous?” Jesse took a deep breath and sighs:  
  
“Well… this it’s kinda new for me, but… as much I want to be calm, I can’t disappoint everyone…” HeeChul recomposed himself and taped his shoulder comfortingly as he speaks with a smile:  
  
“Hey loosen up, concentrate in the fight and do your best! Oh by the way, do you know who is your opponent?” Jesse shakes his head and pursues his lips:  
  
“I don’t have any idea, the staff didn’t tell me nothing yet…”  
  
“I see… so do you wanna take a peek on the arena? The first fight already started.” Jess shrugs his shoulders and answers:  
  
“Why not? Let’s go…” They climbed the stairs and reached the main entrance for the long aisle that guides them for the arena. However, they became amused and agape with the cheers and excited shouts of the audience. The whole stadium was filled with people along with millions of flashed of the cameras; Jesse stared bewildered the whole place as his eyes focused on the arena. Two strong mans were panting hard and one of them was bruised; the fight was tough, but in the end the bruised one, a expert in kung fu managed to finish his opponent, a skilful boxer. The audience goes wild with the winner as they cheer him up. Then, a good looking host spoke heartily to the audience after the end of the battle:  
  
“And that’s it’s our winer… Jung YunHo! Let’s give him some applause!”  
  
Everyone in the stadium cheers the fighter; YunHo bowed and waved to the audience. Of course, the girls on the first row yelled and sigh dreamily at him as he sent a wink for his fans. After he left the arena, Jesse was amazed with his movements; for sure he was a skilful fighter. Then, the booming voice of the host breaks his train of thoughts:  
  
“And now… we will start another special duel! Fighter 3…Shin Dong!”   
  
The audience booed at him since he was known of cheat in his fights, yet no one ever was able to get him since they never got the proofs and that’s why they couldn’t forbid his entrance in the arena. ShinDong walked into the arena, but from the opposite entrance with a sly smile in his face as he wasn’t caring about the audience’s yells. Then, the host silenced the audience as he grabs the microphone again:  
  
“And now I present you a new incomer…Fighter 4… Jung Jesse!”  
  
The whole audience became silenced as they were waiting expectantly the new incomer…Jesse took a deep breath and nodded his head gratefully when he felt HeeChul taps his back and adds heartily:  
  
“Good luck, man! Fighting!” Jess stared to his front and walked by the long corridor. When he was spotted from the audience, a lot of girls yelled happily:  
  
“Omg! He is so cute! And hot too!” Jesse felt himself blushing with the compliments since he wasn’t used to. He steps on the arena, but before he could look to his adversary, his eyes searched in the bleachers for someone know… or precisely, someone that he wanted to see… Yet, everything stopped when he heard clearly:  
  
“Go, Jessi!”  
  
He turns around to find Tiffany giving thumbs up, and then waving and eye-smiling at him. A smile formed in his lips as they held a soft stare; he nodded his head and flashed a beautiful smile to her. Suddenly, he felt his heart pounding like mad as he could be mistaken, but he could swear that he saw some tint of pink in Tiffany’s cheeks. Now, he looked back to his opponent and instantaneously, he narrowed his eyes as he found the guy smiling slyly at him. The host cleared his throat and yells:  
  
“All right, fighters. Step up!” They approached from each other and the host begins:  
  
“Weapons are not allowed and you can’t kill your adversary, understood?” They nodded their heads and the host speaks before leave the arena:  
  
“And the fight starts… now!” He rushed out from the arena and the whole audience became silent again as they were focused into the two fighters.  
  
Meanwhile, Taeyeon and Sooyoung looked to each other and smiled in the way that Tiffany glued her eyes on Jess as she was staring him worriedly, still with her cheeks flushed. She didn’t care about her surroundings, right now she only cared about his safety. So she puts her hands together and whispers hopefully:  
  
“Please, God… don’t let him injury himself……Jessi, be careful…”  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 5**  
  
  
[**Jesse's Fight Costume**](http://ge.iahgames.com/Images/News/Traditional_MFgt.jpg)  
  
Back to the arena, the atmosphere was tense between the contestants; Jess was watching attentively every move about his adversary while the latter started to walk slowly with a crafty smile plastered in his face. They moved in circles in the arena as they were analyzing the enemy; Jess took a deep breath and slightly widened his eyes when he saw his opponent charging against him. Being very fast, Jesse managed to evade the attacks with such a great facility as he heard the audience cheering and shouting his name.  
  
He couldn’t lose his focus, so between a tangle of kicks and punches, he managed to give a efficient counter attack in ShinDong’s abdomen due his kneeled, which made the latter be strongly pushed to behind and pant heavily as he was trying to recover the air that he lost. Dong glare at Jesse fiercely and slowly the sly smile formed into his lips; Jesse keep his fighting posture as he raised his eyebrow in confusion against the enemy… definitely something was wrong…   
  
When Jesse was about to make his move, ShinDong rapidly extended his arms and suddenly, really sharp and thins needles were fired from his metal bracelets against Jesse’s body. The problem it’s that the object was really small and thin, almost impossible to see at naked eye; seeing that the needle was coming to his direction and really fast, he could only dash and avert the shots as he spins in the air and was able to avoid the attack…  
  
The audience was completely puzzled about Jesse’s moves since apparently, he wasn’t avoiding anything and the worst it’s that even the cameras were able to catch ShinDong’s crafty acts. After the latter finished his first turn, he scoffed and suddenly laughs as he admits with an amused tone:  
  
“Hahahaha I must say that I’m surprised… no one ever was able to defend my attacks…”   
  
Jess recomposed himself and shakes his head as he sighs:  
  
“It’s such a pity that a skilful fighter like you have to use this to have success in your fights…you should be ashamed…”  
  
ShinDong snarled as he extended his arms again ready to attack and yells angrily:  
  
“And who you think you are to say that?! Shut up and fight!” Jesse closes his eyes and shakes his head:  
  
“It’s really lamentable… but you don’t let me with any choice.”  
  
Another rain of needles was shoved against his direction, but it was too much… he knows his conditions and if he doesn’t end this fight soon, his life can be jeopardized… Thinking quickly, he tried to make his move, yet he felt something wrong with his body… his body wasn’t responded his mind properly; when he tried to walk or even move himself, a sudden paralysis involved his body. Trying to hold himself from panic, he quickly looks to his chest and found a needle with a purple tip craved in his skin, close to his heart to be exact…  
  
He managed to avert the attacks easily, yet ShinDong craft’s actions were very cheap and shouldn’t be underestimate. He felt his speed decreasing as he quickly removed the needle of his body; he must think rapidly as he reminded that his master told him about this kind of needle once. The material was used for the ancients, and the substance of the needle spread in the body provoking a paralysis and the only way to revert the process it was to remove the needle of the body and wait for at least… 4 hours, depending in where was the aim…  
  
However, when Jess saw his dangerous situation, he had to use his strength quickly and without any kind of waste since it could be a huge damage for him into this fight. When he was about to think into a strategy, he felt a sudden pain in his abdomen, followed by another one in his face, which rapidly send him to the floor. He felt weak with ShinDong sudden attack as he listened the audience booing his opponent and the latter laughing loudly as if he won this battle:  
  
“See?! You can’t win me! Such a wimp hahahahaha!” Since his debilitated state, Jesse felt his body trying to give in slowly; he shut his eyes as he was trying to join his strength…it was hard… he was too innocent to think that everyone into the arena was honest… Deep in his thoughts, he heard the judge starting the counting and suddenly he could see for his panoramic vision, someone standing up and yelling of top of the lungs:  
  
“Don’t give up, Jessi! I know this is nothing to you! Please, don’t give up!”  
  
It was amazing how such words made an immense result in Jesse’s heart; he took a deep breath and raised his head as he found Tiffany staring him softly and hopefully. His eyes never left her; he slowly nodded his head and spoke with himself:  
  
“I can’t quit like this… there is no way that I’m giving up! Not with Tiffany counting with me!”  
  
Now nothing else matters, he gritted his teeth as he slowly propped his weight by his arm and slowly kneeled as soon, he was standing up again. The whole audience cheers him and ShinDong who was with his back against him realized something odd in the public and even more when he heard the judge stop the counting. When he quickly turns around, he gasped deeply and widened his eyes to found Jessi completely on foot and staring fiercely. He could only stammer, now fully dumbfounded:  
  
“Bu-but you sho-should be unconscious right now! How-how did you—“Suddenly, Jess slowly grinned cleverly and positioned himself again:  
  
“You should be worry with you right now…” ShinDong still agape blurts with his eyes doubled sized:  
  
“Wha-Wha--\*Gasp!\*” It was too late; Jess abruptly vanished in the air and quickly appeared in front of him. ShinDong was in shock, but he rapidly recovered himself as he was about to lift his arm and shot Jesse with his needles. However, he was very slow since the short distance between them; suddenly he felt his wrists awfully cold and when he stared at his hands, Jesse managed to freeze his glove’s device and breaks hastily in the last moment. In an act of despair, he charged against Jess with his eyes full of fury; yet everything was a huge blackout when it the last second, Jess gave him a counter attack with a roundhouse kick right in his face, knocking him out at the same instant…  
  
The whole audience became wild as Jesse stood there and the host yelled in awe:  
  
“And that’s it’s our winner! Let’s give a big applause… Jung Jesse!!!”  
  
However, Jess couldn’t even realize what was happening around him, his eyes only seeks for something… or better… for someone… he looked at the spot where Tiffany’ was and now it was empty. He even wasn’t able to realize that Mr. D was watching him with a satisfied, yet a sinister grin in his face as he applauded his victory, with that Mr. D left his seat with a whisper:  
“Hmmm … my expectations of you are getting strong, little Jesse…”  
  
Jesse frowned sadly, but bowed to everyone gratefully and left the arena from all that commotion. He walked slowly back to the long corridor with the people still yelling his name; he finally reach the locker room and seeing that he was alone, he pouted sadly as he leaned his head against his locker. It was when he realized that his lip still was bleeding, so he sighs deeply and when he was about to clean his wound, he felt his world spin when someone rushed into turn him around and pulled him for a tight hug. His brain only started to work again when he heard the joyous sentence, but then a concerned voice:  
  
“Oh Jessi! I’m so proud of you! You did it… But I was really worried!”  
  
When he realized that he was being hugged by Tiffany, he felt his body tense since he wasn’t used to this kind of contact and even more with… her. But, as his body knew what to do and answer by itself, his senses acted faster than his mind. When he realized, he already closed his eyes and slowly, he raised his arms and wrapped around her into a protective embrace. He was afraid that she could feel or listen the furious beats of his heart… he only managed to mutter since he couldn’t trust in his voice now:  
  
“Thank you, Tiffany… thank you for being there…”  
  
Tiffany couldn’t explain why her heart was fluttering to listen his sincere words, she was happy with his victory, but to be honest, when she saw him being hurt by his adversary, she couldn’t stand only watching and do nothing. His safety what she really wanted as each time that she was around him she could feel so safe and true with herself. Slowly, they pulled from the hug as she eye-smiled at him happily, yet she stopped in the midway she saw his lower lips bleeding. She frowns sadly and shakes her head as she taps his head gently:  
  
“What I will do with you? Look at this! You are bleeding, Jessi! Wait a min… I’ll get something to treat this wound!”   
  
“But Tiff--!!!”  
  
He only could nod his head in defeat as she pouted at him sadly; after he gave her the permission, she smiled heartily again and rushed out the place. Slowly, he blinked a few times as he places his right hand into his heart, where he felt like it was a thunderstorm. Why he felt this around her? He couldn’t explain this feeling since he never felt something like anyone that strong; then he slightly jolted when someone tapped his shoulder, followed by an enthusiastic voice:  
  
“Ya! Jesse! Congratulations, man! You really surprised me there!” Jesse sighs in relief and chuckles at HeeChul antics. He turns his attention to the happy guy and laughs subtly:  
  
“Yeah me too…I wasn’t expecting that, but I must admit that Tiffany’s encouragement helped me a lot…”  
  
Suddenly HeeChul raised his left eyebrow and a sly smile formed into his lips and crossed his arms nonchalantly:  
  
“Oh yeah… about that… Jesse boy, you made a double score today, huh?!” Jesse creased his eyebrows in confusion and asked into a low tone:  
  
“What? What are you talking about?”   
  
When Heechul’s smiled happily and was about to answer, they heard someone yelling Jesse’s name:  
  
“Ya! There you are! Congratulations, Jesheeee!” Taeyeon says excitedly as she walks to his direction and accompanied by Sooyoung. The latter smiles and say the same thing as she adds into amused tone:  
  
“Yeah, you nearly got us there. We are happy that someone finally kicked Dong out of tournament!”  
  
Jesse smiled a little and bowed his head gratefully as he stared the two girls:  
  
“Thank you, Taeyeon and Sooyoung, you two are Tiffany’s friends, right?” Taeyeon, Sooyoung and Heechul looked to each other and raised their eyebrow when they saw the sparkle in Jesse’s eyes when he spoke of Tiffany’s name. They smiled to each other as they were thinking at the same thing, so Taeyeon started to speak into an ‘innocent’ tone:  
  
“Yes, you are right. But you don’t need to thank us, you know? To be honest, Tiffany was the one who was really interested to watch your fight…”  
  
“Oh really?” He raised both eyebrows in surprise and felt a smile formed into his lips as Sooyoung continues:  
  
“She really wanted to see your fight and of course, to cheer you up…” Suddenly, Heechul asks into a curious tone as placed between the girls:  
  
“By the way… she was about to come back? Why don’t you check on her to see if it is everything ok?”  
  
Immediately, Jess felt his face completely flushed in the way that they were talking about Tiffany. He simply couldn’t help, everything in her make him feels the way, but why is that? Listening the advices and incentives, he gave in and decided to search for Tiffany. He quickly scanned the whole locker room, but she was nowhere in sight. Each step he takes, his friends were secretly with a subtle smile in their faces. He frowned sadly when he couldn’t find her, so he had an idea, the only placed that he didn’t look for it was the locker’s room entrance.   
  
As soon he dashed to the place with a smile in his face…yet, his smile dropped in the same second as he saw the heartbreaking scene right in front of his eyes… Close to the door, he saw Tiffany and Taecyeon kissing… well, more precisely Taecyeon kissing Tiffany… He already knew about her relationship with him and as much he despises Taecyeon, he couldn’t change the fact that they were dating. He couldn’t explain why such a great ache throbbing in his heart; it was he didn’t trust in Taecyeon or maybe… because Tiffany was able to make him feel things that he never experienced before?  
  
However, with his heart shattering into one million of pieces, he couldn’t watch this painful for any second more since his semblance was completely crushed. So he quickly turn around and start to run faster that he could; in the midway, HeeChul asked worriedly:  
  
“Jesse… what’s wro--?!” He stopped his sentence when he and the girls watched the same scene. Jesse didn’t even stop, he ran away from his suffering as the trio lost him front their sight. The liquid ran by his cheeks as he felt his being totally devastated:  
  
“What it’s happening with me? This pain… Tiffany…”  
  
…  
  
***[Some minutes ago…]***  
  
Tiffany was scanning the whole area of the locker room, trying to find a medical kit to treat Jess’s wound. When she finally was able to find it, she smiled and yells: “Finally!” However, she managed to speak while she heard footsteps getting louder, she quickly turn around with a smile and adds:  
  
“I thought you would be waiting for me, Jes—!!! Oppa?!“ Taecyeon smiled slyly, but internally wanted to strangle Jesse since he was the one Tiffany was calling. He approached from her dangerously as she stared at him with her eyes were widened as he starts:  
  
“Babe… I was looking for you since yesterday… where have you been?” She tried to cover her shock state, she stutters as she was being cornered by him:  
  
“O-oppa… well I was training… you know, my fight will start in the next week so I must be prepared and---!”  
  
She immediately stopped her sentence when he puts his arms around her and seizes her into his grasp. He smiled maliciously with his eyes shining in lust; she creased her eyebrows in confusion and slight… fear. Then, he combed her hair to the side and spoke close to her lips:  
  
“I understand… but I wanted pass sometime with my girlfriend… and I was missing those lips awfully…”   
  
He suppressed his evil smile when he saw a distract Jesse approaching of them; Tiffany couldn’t see Jesse since her back was facing him. When she was about to follow Taecyeon’s stare, the latter out of the sudden crushed his lips against her unexpected one. She became completely paralyzed in shock with the sudden kiss, she couldn’t explain why something was bothering her, and his kisses were rough and cold with no love or feeling into it, simply a feeling of possession or dominance on it. If this happened some months ago, she would crumble down into his kisses completely blindly, seeking for his love…But why everything was so different now?   
  
She couldn’t feel anything into his kisses or touches; yet, she quickly snapped from her inner thoughts as she heard some familiar voices, precisely of her friends. So, abruptly pulling herself from the kiss, she turn around to find her friends shaking their heads with disapproval stare and Jesse running? Tiffany couldn’t explain the reason which made her heart ache with the crushing semblance into Jess’s eyes. When she realized, he already was out of sight; she sighs heavily and turned to Taecyeon with a hard expression:  
  
“Oppa… I have to go…” When she was about to leave, she felt a sudden grasp in her wrist and when she turn around, she saw Taecyeon with an angry semblance. So he hissed into an annoyed tone:  
  
“Where you did you think that you are going?!” She took a deep breath and jerked her arm out of his grasp with a determined voice:  
  
“Oppa… let me go!” He raised his eyebrow and cocked his face as he snarled:  
  
“You are MY girlfriend and you are supposed to be at MY side!” She mocked a laugh and answered harshly:  
  
“Don’t talk to me as you were my owner! Now, let me go…” He held himself as he saw Narsha meters away from them and shaking her head. So he took a deep breath since he had to follow with the plan; he reluctantly removed his hands from Tiffany and talked into a restrained anger tone:  
  
“If this is what you want… I won’t bother you… for now… but I’m still waiting for a proper answer of yours and come to me when you end.”  
  
They held an intense stare and Tiffany simply turn around to leave without answer him as her friends followed her. He was alone into the locker room, he couldn’t help to punch the wall angrily, he even was able to create a small hole on the surface due his strength. He gritted his teeth as he felt Narsha’s presence close to him, so with his head lowered and breathing heavily, he adds into a dark voice:  
  
“You better go ahead with your plan before I kill him!”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Back to Jesse, he was running aimlessly in Jeju’s island as he wanted to make this pain disappear from his heart, but he couldn’t… every time he closed his eyes, the same scene came back to his mind and stabbing his heart into one million of times…  
  
When he realized, he already was back to his shelter or better… his training spot. He was panting slowly, so he dragged himself close to the huge tree and kneeled to seat with his back against the stem. With his head lowered, he felt a fresh liquid running by his cheeks and some drops falling into his outfit. He burrows his face into his hand and suddenly he held his mom’s medallion and whispered into waver tone:  
  
“Mom…what it’s happening with me?! How could I not understand my feelings?!” He closed his eyes and talked sadly to himself:  
  
“How I wish you were here…I need so much for some answers…and your advices.”  
  
Unconsciously, he caressed the object and leaned his head back to the stem and closed his eyes. After some moments in silence, his mind brings a familiar memory…  
  
**[FLASHBACK]**  
  
A small Jesse was watching his mom cooking into their kitchen and suddenly he asks:“Mom… how did you knew that you loved daddy?” Suddenly his mom stops her cooking and turns around with a sad smile in her face. He frowned sadly since he didn’t want to see his mom sad, so she walks to his direction and brush his hair affectionately:“Well…at first it was a little hard since your father had this same problem like yours…” He creased his eyebrows in confusion and asked:“What, mom?” She chuckles at her son’s confusion and continues:“Because he hardly showed his feelings, but when his friend showed interest in me… your father started to avoid me…”“But you never talked about his friend, who is he?” Suddenly, she sighs deeply and speaks:“His name is Dorian Han. He and his father used to be best friends… but I always sensed that he was jealous of your father and his strength… and well…when I realized that I loved him… it was when I saw another girl approaching him and slowly pushing me away from him…”Jesse didn’t speak since he was with his eyes totally focused into his mom as she continues:“My heart ached painfully when I saw them together… I tried to deny the feeling, but I couldn’t… since every time he was close to me… I felt my heart pounding only when our stare meet and I felt completely shy around him…”“So… what you did, mom?” She smiled heartily and adds:“When I couldn’t hold the feeling anymore, I was about to confess him…but… he was faster than me, so he gave me this medallion that belong to his family and confessed that he loved me since our first meeting and couldn’t bear the fear of lose me.” “I couldn’t help to cry in happiness after I discovered the truth…” Jesse slowly widened his eyes and blurted:“It really was like this?” She patted his head and warned:“Yes, but it wasn’t easy, Jesse. If I didn’t fought for my feelings… I wouldn’t ever discover that he had the same feelings for me since your father hardly expressed himself, but had a warm and lovingly heart…”“Remember, Jesse… when you found someone to love… don’t be afraid to show your feelings and don’t give up easily if you know this love its worth to fight for.”Suddenly a small smile formed into his lips as he stood up and spoke into a determined voice:“I promise that I’ll be different of my dad, mom… When I found someone… I’ll fight for her…”A large smile formed into his mom’s face, so she pulled him from a warm hug and whispered to his ear:“Jesse… I’m sure that you will find someone to complete your life…someone to love you as you are… ”***[END FLASHABACK]***  
  
Slowly, new tears fell by his face as Jess became amused with his new discovery. His heart keep pounding with memories with Tiffany smiling or looking into his eyes…it was how he discovered and whispers to himself with his eyes doubled sized:  
  
“Now everything makes sense… the hugs, the smiles, the touches… and my heart……Tiffany… I – I already fell in love with you…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Jesse watched the sunset as he still was deep in his thoughts. Then, finally coming the night, he returned to his dorm and took a shower to relax his body and mind. After he was over, he heard a knock in the front door; his heart pounded again as he thought it could be … her. So he took a deep breath and turns the knob. But it was when he was greeted by his neighbor and now… friend. Heechul looked at him worriedly and asks:  
  
“Can I come in?” Slightly disappointed, Jesse nodded and let him in as the latter found his way to the couch. When Jess was about to ask what he was doing here, Heechul crossed his arms and starts:  
  
“Just to let you know… Tiffany was here earlier and she was looking for you…” Jess’s stare softened when he heard her name, but still he couldn’t understand why Heechul was touching in this subject:  
  
“Hyung… what are you talking ab--!”  
  
“Jesse, I’m not dumb…When you will tell her?” Jess furrows his eyebrows in confusion and asked carefully:  
  
“What are you talking about?” Heechul sighs deeply and stood up as he walked into his direction:  
  
“When you will tell her… that you are totally in love with her?” Jesse gasped deeply and stutters the words:  
  
“Ho-how did you- how did you found it?” Suddenly Heechul chuckles and explains into an amused tone:  
  
“Did you know that you are really transparent, Jesse? Besides… I’m not the only who found that… her friends realized too… so I guess if you are trying to keep in secret… sorry, pal… I think this it doesn’t going to happen…”  
  
Jesse widened his eyes when he heard his sentence; he quickly found a way to seat and started to breathe heavily. Seeing his uneasiness, Heechul pursued his lips and seated right in his side:  
  
“Jesse…if you really love her… you should tell her the truth.” Jesse quickly shot his head up and blurted into a frustrated tone:  
  
“And then what?! This doesn’t change the fact that she already has a boyfriend and besides, I even don’t have any idea if she feels the same thing…”  
  
“So what are you waiting for?! What? You will let her with that jerk that cheats her will half island stay with her?!” Jesse was taken back with his words, how someone could cheat Tiffany; she is perfect, adorable, kind hearted and everything else. However, he balled his fists madly and gritted his teeth with his friend’s answer, now he was even more disgusted with Taecyeon and couldn’t be seated while that guy crushed Tiffany’s heart. He broke his train of thoughts when Heechul placed his hand on his shoulder and warned him:  
  
“I know you are afraid of her answer, but think Jesse… if you don’t try now, you can lost this chance forever… don’t you ever thought that she deserve be loved and protected?” Jesse lowered his head sadly and utters into a soft whisper:  
  
“Of course I do… I just wanna see her happy and safe… I would do anything just to see her smile…”  
  
A genuine smile formed into Heechul’s lips as he heard the truthful answer. So he stood up slowly and walked to the door; Jesse’s eyes follow him and he listened the sentence of his friend:  
  
“See? You already proved that you are different from that jerk… Even that I don’t know Tiffany deeply, she is a good person and don’t deserve to be hurt… now, fight for your girl, Jesse!”  
  
Unconsciously, Jesse felt his heart more lightly with Heechul’s advice; maybe he only needed a trust word to do something. He nodded his head with a small smile and then, Heechul gave him thumbs up as he left his room, but not before to add into a heartily voice:  
  
“If you need anything, just call me… we are neighbors, right?”   
  
After he left, Jesse started to ponder his thoughts and Heechul was right… Tiffany deserves to be loved and protected…he won’t let his opportunity slip from his hands this time. Then, Jesse decided that he needed some rest after this tiring day even when still was early; he dragged himself to the bed and placed his head on the pillow, deep in his thoughts. He already decided that he would move to discover her true feelings and then he would confess; as much he wanted deny, he still was hurt since he saw Tiffany kissing Taecyeon and he didn’t know how much she felt for her boyfriend. If he does the wrong move, he could lose even her friendship… and without Tiffany… certainly it would be a hell, just like a desert without water…  
  
When he was about to sleep, he quickly shot his eyes up when he heard a soft knock in his door. He stood up and walked to the door as he rubbed his eyes; when he grabs the knob, he spoke as he was thinking that it was his neighbor:  
  
“Hyung, did you need anythi---!!! Ti-Tiffany?!” He widened his eyes when Tiffany was right in front of his eyes with a relief semblance in her face. Instantaneously, he felt his heart throbbing incessantly under his chest; he flushed immediately when she steps close to him and asked into a soft voice:  
  
“May I come in?” He quickly snapped from his thoughts and answered:  
  
“Of-of course, please...” He motioned her to enter; as soon he closes the door, she turn around and took a deep breath as she lowered her head:  
  
“I was worried… you disappeared so suddenly and I searched for you the whole day…”  
  
He felt his heart softening when he heard her answer: “So she really care about me…”. He suppressed a smile when he saw her pout, but then the same scene came to his mind, yet he tried to push away from his head as he walked to her. He placed his warm hand into her shoulder and patted gently as he adds softly:  
  
“I’m sorry, Tiffany… I just needed… to be alone for awhile… you know, put my thoughts right…”  
  
She raised her head and tilted to the side as she asked curiously:  
  
“But… what could it be, Jessi?”   
  
“That I love you…” He gulped hard at the thought and shakes his head making her confuse. He smiled weakly, trying to hold his restless heart; he cleared his thoughts and motioned her to seat as he speaks:  
  
“I just needed I time to rest after a tiring fight… that was all.” A smile of relief crept in her lips as she stared at the guy at her side. Yet, she frowned in concern as she points to his lips:  
  
“Yes… but you didn’t take care of this bruise! Look at this, Jessi!” When she was about to stand up, his soft grasp in her wrist makes her seat again. She stared at him as she was puzzled with his smile:  
  
“Ok you won… wait here while I’ll get the med kit.” She nodded dumbly with his beautiful smile as he stood up and left the room. She placed her hands in her cheeks as she recalled the moment that their hands brushed to each other; when she realized Jesse was right at her side again with a puzzled expression in his face as he was staring her expectantly. Since she was ‘caught’, she eye-smiled in nervousness as she quickly grab the med kit of his hands. She soaked the cotton with some medicine and warned softly:  
  
“This will sting a little ok?” He nodded comfortingly and smirked a little. As soon she approached of him, she placed the cotton in his lips and he hissed slightly. She became worried as she asked loudly:  
  
“Oh my God, Jessi, I’m sorry, are you all right?” He held her frenetic hand and chuckles:  
  
“Don’t worry; I’m fine, you can continue…” She gulped slightly when she saw him still holding her hand. So he blushed and removed his hands and her hand suddenly missed his warm; she leaned and slowly she brushed the cotton again as he contains his hisses. Then, without thinking, she placed her hand in his cheek and whispered warmly:  
  
“It will be over soon, I promise…” It was mutual the feeling of their cheeks burning completely. Jesse felt an immense wave calm his heart under her touch; to her side, she couldn’t understand why she was acting without thinking, but… she couldn’t explain… whenever she was close to him, he held this power and attraction over her… this feeling of safety, protection and… something more that she couldn’t describe… yet… only this warm feeling spreading into her heart.   
  
When he realized, she already was over with a satisfied smile in her face. They stared each other deeply, and soon, both of them looked away with their face completely flustered. She took a deep breath and stood up as she adds a little shakily:  
  
“I think I better go now, you need rest. I’m sorry for bothering you, Jessi…” He quickly stood up and walked to the door as he hold the knob but he didn’t opened yet. He turns around and smiled at her:  
  
“You too since tomorrow it’s the second step of your training, did you really thought that I forgot…” Instantaneously, a smile formed into her lips and something inside her was shouting to her act… and before she could think, she already thrown herself into Jesse’s arms for a comfy hug. His body stiffened once again with the contact, but his heart fluttered when this time he knew the reason. Moved by his heart, he closed his eyes and wrapped his arms around her, completely embracing her warmly. He managed to listen her genuine words:  
  
“Thank you, Jesse… even that we couldn’t continue our training… I’m already happy to see you safe”  
  
He smiled heartily and tightens the hug as he whispers gently:  
  
“Don’t be silly, I would still find a way to help you… I wouldn’t ever forget you.”  
  
They stayed like this for some seconds that it looked like hours, and then Jesse took a deep breath as he inhaled her perfumed scent of her hair. He made his mind and he wasn’t turning back this time:  
  
“Tiffany Hwang… I will fight for your love until my last breath.”  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 6**  
  
  
The days passed and Tiffany managed to improve her Elemental Skills a lot thanks to her training and her…teacher. It was inevitable… bit a bit, their mutual attachment was turning into something strong. Tiffany was even able to discover some peculiarities of her ‘master’, like: he hated cucumbers; his favorite color was blue; his favorite hobby includes sleeping and now, she obliged him to stop even more with his formalities and calls her by her nickname. Of course he wasn’t very comfortable with the idea at first, but he end up giving in thanks to her threat… her ultimate cute pout. She internally laughs with such happenings, but became happy to know that he was opening to her slowly and then, strengthens their bound.  
  
At the sunset; silently, Jesse observed her graceful moves and becomes bewildered with such progress while he was seated on the ground with his back against the tree…and of course, because as much he wanted to deny, he couldn’t take his sight away from her since wherever he looked, his mesmerized eyes automatically landed on her gentle, yet determinate semblance…  
  
However, Jesse was a little mindless to realize that he was staring her for awhile with his blank face… and when he ‘awakens’, she briefly stopped her moves and reward him with a sincere smile. He could only smirk nervously in return and lower his head in embarrassment as he tried to cover his flustered face. It would be better to stay with his head lowered at the rest of her training for the good… yes; it was the better option for now.  
  
Then, he quickly shot his head up when he heard an unsatisfied sigh, followed by a frustrating sentence:  
  
“Why this isn’t working?! \*Deep sigh\* Arggghhh…I’m such a failing…”   
  
He frowned immediately as he heard her negative remarks and stared her sad expression. Not being able to stay still, he quickly stood up and walked to her direction, precisely right in front of her. He looked at her and gingerly asks:  
  
“What happened, Fany?” She slowly raised her head and stared at him with her puppy sad eyes. He could swear that if he was made by ice, he would be melted right in this instant. He quickly cleared his throat and sighs deeply as he heard her sad voice:  
  
“I’m doing just like you show me, but I – I can’t keep my flame stable for too much time…” She says as she extended her right hand and a flame formed into her palm; but then, with a short sparkle, her flame simply vanished. She pouted and lowered her head again with her shoulders heavy; his lips moved to downward since he didn’t wanted to see her sorrow. So he asked suddenly:  
  
“Tiffany… are you sure that you are concentrating?”  
  
“Su-sure! I mean… of course!” She quickly blurted and slight stammered, yet he raised his left eyebrow doubtfully and crossed his arms, waiting for a proper response. Noting the uncomfortable silence, she couldn’t help to sighs and explains:  
  
“I’m sorry, Jess… it’s just my first fight will be into two days and I want to be able to improve more…”  
  
“Because I don’t want to disappoint you and…oppa keep worrying me with those messages…”  
  
Her lips moved to downward with her huge number of concerns, that’s why she couldn’t concentrate, because the main focus is… to empty your mind of anything.   
  
Feeling a pang in his heart, he stared at her sadly as he was trying to think in a way to help her… But, suddenly, his mind snapped into an idea; how could he not think on this earlier? He suddenly smiles when he remembers his master’s advices when he was the one who was have been with problem to progress his own training: “If you can’t empty your mind…at least, remember something that can bring you peace…”  
  
He smiled at the memory, his master certainly is very wise or else, he wouldn’t be able to improve his discipline and skills. Then, not wasting time, he quickly placed his hand in her both shoulders and gathering her attention. He stared deeply into her eyes and tried to contain the beating of his reckless heart; he started seriously:  
  
“Fany… don’t punish yourself… if you have your problems and don’t want to talk about it, I won’t push you… but…” He briefly stopped and his voice became softer while her chocolate eyes were staring him expectantly:  
  
“If you at least… remind into something that makes you feel good and in peace with yourself… and remember… no one will be disappointed with you… trust in yourself like… I trust in you.”  
  
Her mouth was hanged open with such simple, yet deep truth. For sure Jesse was able to understand her even better than herself; she could only nod her head and stare him gratefully in return. He grinned a little and carefully, he held her extended hands as he whispers for the last time:  
  
“Try again, Tiffany… please.” Feeling more confident, she nodded her head again and closed her eyes. As soon everything was dark, instantaneously one million of thoughts crushed into her mind; she flinched a little and a sudden sparkle aroused from her hands, but vanished quickly like always. She was starting to feel uncomfortable as if she was fail again… but then, she felt a slight squeeze in her hands and remember that Jesse was holding her hands so carefully. She couldn’t help to feel a hot wave spreading in her body as her cheeks bloomed into a pink color for sure. However, she liked this feeling… the same feeling that she didn’t felt for awhile… the feeling of safety and trust, like if she falls… for sure someone will be there to catch her. It was when suddenly a genuine smile formed into her lips as she spoke into her mind with her eyes still closed:  
  
“How come I didn’t remind this before?”  
  
Slowly, she started to focus in her aim and suddenly, she felt a great power flowing through her whole body. She canalized her energy to her hands and held right there; she was so into her mind when out of sudden, she heard a blissful tone:  
  
“Tiffany! You made it!” When she realized that it was Jesse’s voice, she quickly shot her eyes open only to become agape with the blazing flame dancing completely alive in her hands…with her eyes wide open, she yells in pure joy as she was jumping in her spot:  
  
“Oh my God! I did it!”  
  
For the first time, the flame didn’t disappear from her hands. She played with the fire pillar in her hand with a huge smile in her face, still amazed with such happening. But then, when she looked behind of the fire, she saw Jesse smiling proudly at her, just admiring her triumph and happiness. It was when her smile widened as she suddenly placed her hands together to damp the fire. In response, Jesse frowned confusedly with her action, but before he could argue, he already was enveloped into a tight hug followed by a booming voice:  
  
“I DID IT, JESSI! I REALLY DID IT!”  
  
His heart pounded madly with her tight grip in his neck along with the blush in his cheeks. However, he couldn’t deny that he was really happy with her victory; then, he let his feeling flow as he smiled heartily and spins with her into a twirl hug. They stayed in silence and then, Tiffany suddenly pulled from the hug only to lower her head again but with some tint of pink in her face; so she speaks into a coy tone:  
  
“Thank you so much, Jessi… I don’t know if I would be able to do it without you.” He couldn’t help to smile and shakes his head:  
  
“Of course you would… you only need have more trust in yourself and then… you will be an expert in these arts.”   
  
“Only if you will be my teacher.” She says with her bright eye-smile and of course, making his heart jump in his chest. He quickly averted his eyes to his side and continued into a quiet voice as he was afraid to stutter:  
  
“I always will be here… remember that… but I’ll have to think twice to mess with you…” Then, she titled her head to her side and stared him confusedly while he chuckled heartily with her question:  
  
“But… why would it be?” He took a step close to her and whispered warmly:  
  
“Because you would melt me…\*more than you already did\*” He smiled weakly with his own thought; then she still was looking at him expectantly, but when he was about to speak, she burst in laugher and slightly tapped his shoulder:  
  
“Hhahahah Jessi! You are so funny! Don’t worry, I won’t use my powers against you!”  
  
“Hehe neither do I… expect the fact that I already proved your punch in the hard way…” He couldn’t help to chuckle at her puppy expression; she still apologizes for their past incident. So to relief the tension, he held her shoulders gently and speaks into a cheerful tone:  
  
“Don’t be like that, I already forgave you… Come on, we have to celebrate your triumph tonight!”  
  
She eyed him quizzically as they started to walk out of their training area; he chuckles at her expression and adds:  
  
“Since I guess it doesn’t have any restaurants around here… I guess will have to eat at Jess’s, so what you think?” Instantaneously, a large smile formed into her lips as she walked to right his side and poked his arm:  
  
“It’s an excellent idea, Jessi! I just can’t wait to meet the chef!”  
  
He laughs at her silly comment as they walked out of the woods. However, he couldn’t help to think into something important… about the advice that he gave her… when he did to his own training, the only thing that he could remind… it was his mother… but what Tiffany thought to make her so secure with herself? Then, while they were walking under the beautiful starry night, he asks curiously:  
  
“Hey, Fany… I was wondering… when I told you about think into something to pacify your mind… what did you though?”  
  
Suddenly, she halted in her tracks and turn around. They stared to each other for some seconds and suddenly, she smiled shyly as she looked down with her voice really gentle, but firm:  
  
“I remember of…” He stared at her expectantly, and then she raised her head and smiled gently at him:  
  
“… You …”  
  
He felt his body swaying at his spot, he heard right? She told that he was able to do that? Any doubt was simply erased of his mind when she continued coyly:  
  
“Because you trusted in me since the beginning… and wherever I found peace and safety… I found in you…”  
  
With a huge and thankful smile, he simply nodded his head as his voice stuck on his throat thanks her honest confession. While they walked back to his dorm, he couldn’t help to steal some glances of her content face; he sighs while his heart beats erratically:  
  
“If only you knew…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
“A party, master? Are you sure this is the right time? I’m afraid that—“  
  
“I didn’t ask for your opinion, Narsha.” Mr. D deep voice cuts Narsha’s remark as the latter sucked her cheek from inside and grunted soundlessly. Mr. D who was checking the new specimens into his huge lab, suddenly chuckles slyly when he saw Narsha mad expression. He step back from the long tubes, each one of them was filled with some strange purple liquid as some tubes already was filled with persons in some kind of coma. He turns his attention to her and sighs heavily:  
  
“I will answer your unnecessary question, reckless child.” Narsha rolled her eyes and crossed her arms as he started quietly:  
  
“When the first phase of their tournament ends… fresh specimens will come to my experience. Hahaha the losers will be just mere pawns of my main plan… With this party, I can analyze my aims closely…” Suddenly he stopped his explanation and started to laugh into a dark way as his eyes showed some evil aura:  
  
“But this it’s just a step for what I really want… our dear Jesse hahahahahaha!!!”  
  
Narsha raised her eyebrow and asked as she cuts her master evil laugh:  
  
“Are you sure that he is worthy for all this effort, boss?” His expression becomes dark as he punched a table, of course making crumble down at the same moment. Narsha slight gasped at his response, even more when he suddenly smiles slyly:  
  
“I’m only doing this tournament because of him… I passed 18 years looking for that insect! And now that he is in my hands… he won’t run away again!”  
  
He keeps laughing manically as he yells:  
  
“He will be the first of my ultimate experiment…” Suddenly he stops laughing, and grunted as he whispered darkly:  
  
“And once I finished him… I will end with his miserable life, just like his father! Hahahhahahaha!”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
“Wow, Jessi! This smells so good! I didn’t know that you cook!” Tiffany blurted happily as she was seated on the chair close to the small kitchen’s counter while she watched Jesse attentively. The latter just chuckles and answers while he was cooking the noodles with his back facing Tiffany:  
  
“Yeah… I held some secrets under my sleeve \*giggles\*” Once again, Tiffany took a deep inhale into the attracting food scent and added with a smile in her face:  
  
“I’m sure that it’s delicious!” She heard him laughing again and when she was spacing out due the fabulous scent and her stomach keep grumbling; Jesse already was in front of her holding a bowl filled with noodles and other condiments, for sure it looked tasty. He smiled at her dumbfounded expression and placed the bowl right in front of her, at the kitchen’s counter. He seated into the opposite direction, in front of her precisely; he hand her the sticks and talked into a warm voice:  
  
“I hope you like it… it is Naengmyun…it’s my specialty.”  
  
He added with a content voice as Tiffany was mesmerized with the tasty food. But since she was in silence, he speaks curiously:  
  
“What are you waiting for? Come on, dive in!” Completely obeying his soft demand, Tiffany nodded her head excitedly with her eye-smile; so after grab an amount of cold noodles, she placed into her mouth and closed her eyes to taste the meal. Jesse held his breath in anticipation as he was staring her expectantly; yet, his started to breathe again when he saw Tiffany’s dreamy expression as she speaks into a delighted tone while she enjoyed his cooking:  
  
“Oh my God, Jess! This is the best naengmyun that I ever taste! Mines would have taste like trash close to yours…”   
  
He gave at heart laugh as he shakes his head in denial:  
  
“Come on, Fany. Don’t say that, I’m sure that you cook very well!” She quickly shakes her head after gulp another amount of noodles:  
  
“No I don’t… honestly I don’t cook… Tae and Soo have forbidden me to even approach from our kitchen. I can’t blame them… I almost burn out our apartment that time… hahahaha I really sucks!”  
  
“I disagree… you only need to train a little more, just like earlier. I can give you some lessons whenever you want…” He adds with a smile in his face. Tiffany couldn’t help to smile in response and nod:  
  
“I’ll think about it…but say, Jessi. How come a guy like you… cooks? I mean… don’t get me wrong, but normally, guys around your age doesn’t have any kind of interest in that area. What made you start to cook?”  
  
He crossed his arms and giggled as he answers:  
  
“Well… I don’t like to bother anyone, so when I was around 10, I wanted to take care of myself and learn some good cooking…” He stopped briefly while his expression becomes sadly, but he smiled weakly:  
  
“Besides, my mom was the one who started to teach me how to cook when I was 5 \*chuckles\* I could be watching her the whole day and I wouldn’t be tired… she was the one who teaches me to not give up easily…”  
  
Tiffany already finished her meal and was staring him as she was listening his words attentively. Feeling a little down with his semblance, she asks carefully into a soft tone:  
  
“Did you still think on her?” He took a deep breath and looked to the window as he speaks softly:  
  
“Everyday…”  
  
Then, trying to enlighten the mood, Tiffany decided to make some random questions, but in the end she could admit that she wanted know much more about this incredible guy in front of her:  
  
“Well… I bet you have someone waiting for you \*chuckles\*” He stared at her blankly as he was catching her idea; then he asked with his eyebrow raised:  
  
“Huh… Tiffany… what are you talking about?” So, she pushed her bowl from aside and placed her chin in her palm as she stared him intensively with sparkles in her eyes. She eye-smiled at him and blurted excitedly:  
  
“Come on, Jessi… don’t be shy! I bet some amazing guy like you must have a girlfriend, right?!”  
  
When the information sunk in, he doubled the size of his eyes and blushed immediately due the surprising question. Seeing how much the girl in front of him was so interested in his answer, he vigorously shook his head and answered with his voice wavering a little:  
  
“ Er… I guess… not…” She furrows her eyebrows automatically in confusion, but without knowing, she felt her heart lighter with his answer. So she pressed on, still clearly curious:  
  
“What?! I mean… its pretty difficult to any girl don’t fall for you…are you sure that it doesn’t have any girl who showed some interest on you or maybe… flirted with you?”  
  
He gulped hard with her questions and in addition, how each time Tiffany leaned close to him when she wanted those answers… Recomposing himself, he speaks honestly with his low voice; staring her shining eyes into a mesmerized mode:  
  
“I… well… if this happened… I didn’t realize it…”  
  
She made an “Oh” in response as she saw him fidget his fingers coyly, she smiled at the view and this time, she asked softly:  
  
“Jessi… did you already… fell in love before?”  
  
He immediately stopped his fidgeting and felt his heart halt abruptly with her question… yes; this was the question that he feared the most. He couldn’t lie, even more that the person that he most love… was in front of his eyes. He gulped hardly and breathes heavily when Tiffany was staring him directly, but at the same time with concerned eyes. Each second in silence was getting worse for him, then suddenly, he realized something…So, trying to calm his furious heart, he decided say the truth, but omitting some words. His breathing becomes steady slowly and he stared at her melting and curious eyes; he started leisurely, but not before gulp loudly once again:  
  
“…Yes…but…” The words were dying in his lips in the way that Tiffany looked into his eyes. He couldn’t decipher her expression, but then, he continued into says his sentence in the most sincere way:  
  
“I still am until now…and always will…”   
  
Suddenly, Tiffany couldn’t understand her own feelings, seconds ago she showed clearly interest in his love life, but now… she felt slightly… hurt… Who could be the girl that captured Jesse’s heart? She must have sure that this girl should be amazing to have someone with a gold heart like he has… Noticing, that he was staring her worriedly, she couldn’t let him know that she was a little… frustrated… since she was the one who started those questions. So she cleared her throat, and smiled weakly at him as she continues now, in not so ‘cheerful’ voice:  
  
“So… how is she? Do I know her?”  
  
He pressed his lips together and creased his eyebrows doubtfully as he was trying to describe her, but without let her know that she was the one he was talking about. So he looked at her again, and his heart started to pound madly one more time; he was able to smile a little and let his heart speak for him:  
  
“Yes… you do… And she is the most incredible person that I ever met… She is beautiful from inside and outside, diligent, kind hearted, caring, smart… in other words, she is practically an angel send from above…and the last thing, but one of the most I love on her it’s... her beautiful smile… whenever she does, I can’t stop admiring her and waiting her for do this again…”  
  
At the same time Tiffany heard the love into his eyes in how he described ‘his beloved one’; her heart was twisted with strong feelings… First, she couldn’t help to feel deep inside her, that his words were so familiar and genuine for her…but at the other side; she could feel a pang of jealously dwelling in her heart. Who could be the girl of his dreams that he could make his feel over his heels for her? Realizing that she was in silence for awhile lost in her thoughts, she hurriedly shakes her head and smiled weakly at him as she asks:  
  
“So… did you already \*gulp\* confessed at her?” He shook his hear vigorously and spoke slowly as he chuckles sadly:  
  
“No…I’m afraid that she wouldn’t return my feelings…besides… I think she just sees me as a old brother, nothing more…”  
  
She frowned sadly at his crushing words and tried to comfort him even that he didn’t confessed yet. Without think twice, she grabs his hands and stared at him directly as she started into a soft tone:  
  
“Don’t give up, Jesse. I’m sure that once that she knows your feelings for her… she will love you for sure… I mean, who wouldn’t? You are the most truthful and amazing guy that I ever know. She is a lucky girl to have you…”  
  
He nodded his head and blushed slightly as she was giving encouraging words to him, but in his mind he only could think: “How I wanted to tell that it’s you, Tiffany...” They held a meaningful stare into a warm silence; yet, they couldn’t deny the furious beatings in both hearts. Tiffany didn’t know why her heart was pounding like mad, it was like it wanted to say something to her, but she didn’t know since she never felt this strong feeling for anyone else before.   
  
However, their warm moment stopped abruptly when Tiffany’s phone ringed suddenly and they quickly pulled their hands with a tint of pink in their faces. She laughs nervously and rapidly grabs the phone only to sigh when she realized that it was one of Taecyeon’s messages:  
  
**From:** Taec Oppa  
“Babe, I’m sorry for those things I said. Please, forgive me. I miss you a lot. I’m waiting for you. Love you, your Oppa.”  
  
She grunted slightly at his message, but her heart couldn’t help to sway a little with his corny words. So realizing that already was late, she stood up from the chair and Jesse did the same thing as she speaks:  
  
“I have to go, Jesse. I’m really sorry for bother you. Thank you for today, the food was delicious!”  
  
He smiled a little and added into a sincere voice:  
  
“You doesn’t bother me at all, Tiffany. Feel free to come back, I’ll be waiting for you.”  
  
She smiled genuinely at his words as she nodded her head. When they reached the door, she suddenly turns around and leaned a little as she speaks into warm tone:  
  
“I wish the best to you, Jesse. She is really a lucky person to have you to lover her. You are a great person and… a great friend.”  
  
Without knowing, her last sentence shattered his heart into pieces with that word… ‘friend’. Yet, everything stopped when he felt her warm arms around his neck and she pressing her head against his chest. He was terrified since she could be able to listen his heart pounding erratically; but slowly, the feelings engulfing them as he extended his arms and wrapped around her tightly. Both of them closed their eyes and enjoyed the warm embrace; the hug was bittersweet with both thoughts:  
  
“Yes, Jesse… This is the only thing that you will be… just her friend… just a friend.”“I should be happy for you, Jessi… but why I am not? My heart it’s aching so much right now…”  
  
After some seconds just enjoying the embrace, both of them pulled from the hug and Jesse open the door for Tiffany. The latter walked out, but not before to turn around and speaks warmly:  
  
“Good night...” He leaned his head on the door and speaks softly:  
  
“Good night, Tiffany. Sweet dreams.”  
  
She smiled and answered gently:  
  
“You too. Bye, Jesse.”  
  
He only nodded his head with a weak smirk as she turned around and walked down the hall and finally disappearing from his sight. He keep staring deadly the empty hall as she still was there, he knew that it was Taecyeon who called earlier at her since he caught a glimpse of his ID showing in her phone’s display. Slowly, one tear felt by his cheek as his heart was crushed, so he whispered weakly to the air:  
  
“If only you knew that… I love you… Tiffany.”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Back to Tiffany, the latter walked with heavy steps by the long corridor. Her heart and her mind were heavy with millions of thought and feelings, but in the end, everything end up in her thinking in Jesse again. She stopped briefly and stumbles her head as she whispers to herself:  
  
“I wish I could not ask this to him… me and my big mouth… Aishhh!” She pressed her knuckles against the side of her head. Then, trying to forget this madly concern about Jesse, she quickly hooked her phone in her pocket and stared at Taecyeon’s message. She shook her head and took a different way to her dorm. So, walking to her ‘oppa’s’ room, her mind was racing; her heart was divided. Now, in front of his door, she took a deep breath and grabs the knob. She creased her eyebrows in confusion when she realized that the door was open.  
  
Then, she entered in his room, but the place was completely dark. So she scratches her head and asked to herself:  
  
“What? He calls me and he is neither in his room?”  
  
So she sighs deeply and shakes her head as she was heading to the door. Yet, she halted abruptly when she heard strange noises coming behind her, precisely at his bedroom. Her heart started to beat anxiously as she took each step close to his bedroom’s door. Then, as soon she stopped, she could listen the sounds more clearly:  
  
“Hmmmm oppa…you are so needy today … hehehehhe”“Come here, baby…”  
  
Tiffany’s mouth dropped in response when he heard his voice, so not wanting to listen anything more. She furrows her eyebrows angrily and hastily grabs the knob and swung the door open abruptly. She became agape to see her boyfriend half naked making out with a random blonde girl. Tiffany widened her eyes and barked madly with tears forming in the corner of her eyes:  
  
“WHAT’HELL IT’S HAPPENING HERE?!”  
  
…  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 7**  
  
  
  
“WHAT’HELL IT’S HAPPENING HERE?!”  
  
**[Some minutes ago…]**  
  
An angry Taecyeon went to a bar close of their dorm and become drunk of many drinks he took while he sent a message to Tiffany by his phone. Meanwhile, a blonde woman keep staring him seducing with a teasing smirk playing in her lips from afar and after some minutes, decided to make her move. Even being drunk, Taecyeon answered the seducing greeting of the woman with a sly smile. Not so far from that, they already were into a tangle of make out sessions with kisses and something else…Not holding himself any longer, he didn’t want to waste this chance since he was upset with his early quarrel with Tiffany. So trying to get this out of his head, he guided the woman to his room and start the heavy session again. After some moments of make out, he suddenly heard a noise, but decided to ignore as grunted and continued his moves. However, when they are about to ‘go on’ with their session, he jumped in shock and quickly untangled himself from the woman when he heard the door being opened abruptly followed by Tiffany’s mad cry out…  
  
-x-  
  
Back to the present, Tiffany was glaring fiercely the half naked couple in front of her with her lips completely tremble in full shock. The scene was simply miserable to her sight; she could have her suspiciousness about Taecyeon of his sudden disappearance; or the mysterious calls that he insisted to hide or even when tried to hide his neck constantly. Then, after she putted her thoughts together, she felt completely disgusted as her heart ached heavily. Suddenly, the woman took the chance and ran out of the room as she tried to cover her body; Taecyeon ran to Tiffany’s direction and grabbed her hands as he yells into a begging voice:  
  
“Tiffany! Babe! This is not what it looks like! I didn’t mean it! I was drunk and—“  
  
\*HARD SLAP\*  
  
“SHUT UP, YOU LIAR!” She bursts in tears, but with her voice cracking and filled with sorrow.   
  
“Bu-but, babe I—“  
  
\*ANOTHER HARD SLAP\*   
  
Taecyeon held his redden cheek as he stared Tiffany in shock. Her semblance was completely emotionless as uncountable tears of pain rolled by her eyes. She gritted her teeth in rage when she smelled the alcohol in his breath. So when he was recovering from the slap, she snapped angrily, but her voice cracked every time that she tried to raise her tone:  
  
“THIS ISN’T AN EXCUSE! TELL ME! SHE WAS THE FIRST OR NOT?!”  
  
He tried to seize her hands, but no use since she jerked her arms from his grasp hastily, so he tried to plead again:  
  
“Tiffany… babe I—“She greeted her teeth completely mad and asked loudly with venom in her voice:  
  
“ANSWER ME?! YES OR NOT?!” He took a deep breath and lowers his head due her piercing glare. He didn’t have courage to answer, but he whispers:  
  
“… No…” Another painful stab in her heart and keep thrusting all over again in her soul until shatter her heart in pieces. She could only look at his disgraceful semblance and speak slowly, yet in obvious repulsion:  
  
“Yo-you disgust me… I don’t want to see your face ever again!”  
  
Before he could say a word, she immediately ran away out of his room aimlessly by the corridors. Her heart was aching painfully where her hand lied as tears and tears fell by her eyes and washing her face completely. Everything that she had built in this relationship, everything that she felt or live was a lie… Taecyeon cheated and manipulated her heart… and the worst was that she didn’t believe in their friends… How it hurts when her loved ones just wanted see her happiness and she couldn’t see the truth in their advices or words…  
  
Then, after be in front of the building; she stared at the cloudy sky and didn’t even bother to realize that it was about to rain soon. The tears fell in cascade and she proceeds to run in the middle of the night wherever her feet took her, just trying to find a shelter for a broken heart.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
\*THUNDER\*  
  
Jesse merely flinched due the shining lighting as he stared the heavy rain by his window. He couldn’t sleep at night, his mind was filled with thoughts and his heart still was wounded with his previous conversation with Tiffany. Yet, when it was around 1 AM, being fully awake, he couldn’t help to feel a tug in his heart even without know the reason…  
  
As much he tried to sleep and close his eyes, he couldn’t… something definitely was not right, he thought. When he started to debate to himself what could be wrong? It was faster than an arrow… he quickly snapped his eyes open and whispered:  
  
“Tiffany!”  
  
He started to shake his head in conviction that she was all right and he was just imaging things. Yet, his mind wasn’t able to persuade his heart; he was getting worried and he will do something about it, even if he had to wake up from her sleep. So, grabbing his thick black hoodie, he dashed to Tiffany’s dorm and took a deep breath before knock the door. He nibbled his lower lip apprehensively as the door stood still; when he was about to leave after sigh deeply, his hopes were up when he saw the knob turning. He gulped and already made his “I’m sorry speech”; yet he stopped in the midway to find Taeyeon rubbing her eyes with dark circles under her brown orbs. He creased his eyebrows in confusion and quickly bowed his head in apologize:  
  
“Taeyeon, I’m really sorry for wake up so suddenly.” Taeyeon shook her head and spoke softly, trying to widen her eyes to stay more ‘awake’:  
  
“Don’t worry, Jeshe. But what are you doing here? Is everything all right?”  
  
Jesse pondered his thoughts and decided it was the best to speak the truth, so he explains:  
  
“Forgive me for wake you in the middle of the night, but… I don’t know…I just got the feeling that I should check Tiffany. I suppose she is sleeping right now, right?”  
  
Taeyeon was agape with his words, so she quickly blurted:  
  
“Do you know something about Fany, Jeshe?! Oh my God! She didn’t come back until now! I was about to ask you the same thing since I thought she still was with you!”  
  
Jesse gasped and doubled the size of his eyes as he asked worriedly and held Taeyeon’s shoulders:  
  
“This is not good! I have to find her N.O.W! Who knows where she can be at this time?!”  
  
Taeyeon widened her eyes in fear for her friend; she can’t stay with her arms crossed while Tiffany is lost in this island. So she quickly grabs her jacket and already putting in her body, she pass by Jesse and yells restlessly:  
  
“We have to find her! She might be in trouble now!”  
  
Automatically, before she could take another step, Jesse held her right in her place as he explains frenetically:  
  
“Wait, Tae! What if she comes back? Someone has to be here for her! Try to take some rest, your fight is tomorrow and you need be full rested!”  
  
Taeyeon looked at him apprehensively as she still wanted to after Tiffany; besides she, Tiffany and Sooyoung are best friends, and friends don’t let the other to behind. So she heard Jesse sighing as he looks at her eyes deeply:  
  
“Listen, I know this can look hard to you, but you have my word that no matter what…I’ll bring her back!”  
  
When she was about to speak, Sooyoung aroused from the room and held her shoulder as she nodded to Jesse:  
  
“I heard the whole thing and I couldn’t sleep as well without know where Fany could it be since she didn’t answered our calls.” She turned her attention to him and speaks sincerely:  
  
“We would only bother you, Jesse… Please, bring her safe; we will be waiting for you two…”  
  
Taeyeon took a deep breath and nodded hesitantly. Seeing their agreement, Jesse nodded sincerely in return; not wasting one second, he rushed out the corridor and disappeared from their sight. Sooyoung and Taeyeon stared at the empty corridor and silently prayed for their friend’s safety…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
“TIFFANY! TIFFANY! WHERE ARE YOU!?” Jesse was holding an umbrella and running over the island in his pursuit for Tiffany, but she was nowhere in sight. The rain keep pouring as he didn’t gave up, not just because of his promise, but he can’t leave his loved one alone and unprotected in the a middle of a thunderstorm.  
  
He tried everywhere, but the most places were locked or abandoned since no one dared to risk their selves into a wild storm. His pursuit already lasted one hour and still, no signs of her…not holding his contrite heart any longer; he punched a rigid wall creating a considerable crater on the surface and yells in almost despair. Tears mixed with rain in his face as he lowered his face and begged:  
  
“God… mom… help me… I won’t forgive myself if something happens to her, please… please…”  
  
So he sighs heavily and turns around as he didn’t give up of his search. It was when he heard, a very tiny and almost inaudible whimper, followed by multiples sobs. He squeezed his eyes for a better sight and became agape when he saw… he saw the most fragile being shaking due the cold weather and the sensible state. Not so far from him, Tiffany was seated on a concrete bench under a tiny cover completely exposed to the cold wind; she was hugging her arms and trying to warm herself. In a blink of an eye, a wave of relief takeover of Jesse’s heart as he couldn’t hold himself anymore, so he yells and runs to her and the umbrela dropped of his hand imediatelly:  
  
“TIFFANYYY!”  
  
The latter slightly raised her head to meet his warm stare, when she realized, Jesse already removed his thick and long hoodie and wrapped around her as he keep rubbing her skin to warm her. Now, kneeled in front of her, his heart ached to see her in such fragile semblance… her eyes were swollen, her lips were tremble and slightly white due the cold, in the end, her expression was really painful. He needed get out of here before she could be seriously sick, yet he stopped when he heard her waver voice in a gentle whisper:  
  
“Yo-you came, Je-Jesse… you really came for… me?” He sniffed soundly and brushed her bangs as he answer seriously:  
  
“Of course I would, silly.”   
  
Then she lowered her head and sniffed as she leaned her head to his shoulder as she whispered weakly:  
  
“He…he really che-cheated on me, Jessi… and I – I thought… I thought that he really was marrying with me… I’m such an idiot…”  
  
Feeling the tug in his heart again, he frowned sadly; but in a swift move, he wrapped his arms around Tiffany protectively as he whispers to her ear gently:  
  
“No… you are not… he is the one to blame… he don’t deserve you and your love…”  
  
Then, after moments in silence in the comforting hug, he raised her from the floor as he carried her into the bridal style. Luckily, the rain stopped and he was able to take her back to the dorm. Nevertheless, he could feel her face nuzzling in his chest as her hand was firmly pressed against his chest and nested in his collarbones. He peeked at her carefully and realized that she stopped her crying as she was with her eyes closed and she fell asleep. He lowered his head, completely crushed and furious to see her like this; so he whispers the true in his heart gently to the crown of her head where he sniffed the delicate scent:  
  
“If only you let me take all this pain of your heart… I would take everything on me just to not see you suffering and smiling again…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Back to his dorm, Jesse carefully opens the door since he still was carrying Tiffany. Now, inside of his bedroom, he gingerly placed her in his bed. He stared at her inoffensive form and realized that she still was holding her phone. Reminding of her worried friends, he grabbed the object carefully to not wake her and whispered against the phone:  
  
“Tae… she is safe, but she is sleeping now. Please, bring some warm clothes to her, bye.”  
  
He hangs up and stared at her gently, still with a tug in his heart as he creased his eyebrows sadly. Short minutes later, he heard a hurried knock on the door and walked to see who was. He sighs in relief as Taeyeon and Sooyoung rushed inside of the dorm asking innumerable questions like: “Where was she?!” or “How is she doing?!” or even, “Is she really all right?” Then, he decided that it was the best to see by their own. Once they walked to his bedroom, the girls slightly gasped and frowned sadly to see their dear friend in such depressing state…  
  
They looked at Jesse and he nodded his head in agreement, so not wasting time, they walked to the bed and Taeyeon caressed Tiffany’s hair as Sooyoung rubbed her shoulder. Stirring a little, Fany fluttered her eyes open, but not completely; yet, she whispers into a breaking heart tone with tears flowing by her eyes:  
  
“I – I’m so sorry, girls… I should have listened to you… but I – I was so… so blind and…”  
  
“Shhhh… isn’t your fault, Fany.”  
  
“Yes, we know that you were a victim of that jerk, but we will be here whenever you need us.” Sooyoung completed Taeyeon’s remark as they caressed their sad friend’s back. However, seeing that Tiffany still was shaking, Jesse carefully asks:  
  
“Girls, could you please help her to get change? She really need warm herself soon.”  
  
Sooyoung and Taeyeon nodded in agreement as carefully helped Tiffany to get up and Jesse guided to his bathroom. Once they were in, Jesse waited for their return which only took 5 minutes. They helped put Tiffany on bed, well precisely it was Jesse who carried her to the comfy mattress again and turned his attention to the two worried friends:  
  
“I know that you two are worried since she is your friend. But, your fight is tomorrow and you need some rest…”  
  
“But, Jes--“ Sooyoung tried to intervene as Taeyeon ends:  
  
“Jeshe… we already disturb you too much for a night and—“He placed his hands in their shoulders and stared at them sincerely:  
  
“Not at all…I can take care of her the whole night if I have to; it doesn’t bother me at all. Please, accept my offer… just like you; I want to see her smiling again and out of danger…”  
  
He sadly adds as he turns his head around to see Tiffany sleeping silently. The friends looked to each other deeply and Taeyeon sighs heavily as she stared at Jesse:  
  
“We will do it since our fight is tomorrow, but promise that you will call us if you need anything…”  
  
He appreciates her answer as he bowed his head gratefully. Then, they walked to Tiffany as Taeyeon and Sooyoung whispered “Good night” and kissed her forehead. After some seconds, Jesse walked them to the door and they said their farewells, but not before Taeyeon turn around and smile truly grateful:  
  
“Jesse… thank you so much for bringing her back… we love her a lot and… we know you feel the same thing...”  
  
He slightly gasped and widened his eyes with the truth, so his feelings towards Tiffany it wasn’t much hidden as he stutters:  
  
“Ho-how did y--“ Taeyeon smiled and placed her hand in his shoulder as she explains:  
  
“Isn’t very hard to read your feelings Jesse… it’s just to realize the way you care about her or how you smiles brightly when she is close to your or even the way you look at her, your eyes shone with love…”  
  
He became agape with her explanation, yet, the duo laughs briefly at his shock expression and Sooyoung warns:  
  
“Yes, Jesse. We really appreciate your help and we are cheering for you two! You better take care of her or else…” She cracked her knuckles and jabbed her finger to him. But Taeyeon quickly lowered her arm and shakes her head in denial. After some moments, his semblance softened as he added solemnly with his cheeks flushed:  
  
“I wouldn’t ever do something to hurt her feelings… I prefer hurt myself than see her crying again…”  
  
Satisfied with his answer, both girls smiled widely and pulled him for a tight hug; in result, he blushed at the contact, but slightly smiles at the girl’s antics. Soon, they pulled from the hug and whispered some last cheering sentences and finally left from his sight. He waited for them vanish for the aisle completely and then, he came back to his room, precisely in watching the sleeping girl lay on his bed. Sighing deeply, he walked to her and covered with warm blankets until her chin as he left the room with his pillow and some covers. He turn around for the last time and stared at her with weight in his heart, so he shakes his head and turn off the lamp, finally leaving the room to get some sleep…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Minutes passed like hours and hours passed like ages as he keep turning around or moving on the couch since he couldn’t sleep. Every time he tried to close his eyes, flashes of Tiffany’s broken face appears into his mind and keep him awake. However, he snapped his eyes open and slowly seated on the couch when he heard some voices, precisely faint whimpers or sobs in his room in almost inaudible tone. He frowned sadly with his heart aching again and not being able to stay still without do anything; he parted to his room and opened the door very slowly.  
  
Instantaneously, he felt a stab in his being when he saw fresh tears falling by Tiffany’s face, even when the latter sleeping. The scene was almost unbearable, so moved by his heart; his feet dragged him to her and he slowly kneeled right at her side. He stared at her angelic face caringly and hesitantly, he brushes a strand of hair from her cheek to behind of her ear. Admiring her delicate, yet trouble face, so he could only whispers gently:  
  
“It breaks my heart see your suffering, Tiffany…”  
  
He keeps saying his confessions as he strokes her cheeks so endearingly and in result, Tiffany slightly stirred. He stopped his moves briefly, but continued when he heard her light breathing; tempted by her fragile state and touched by her situation, once again his heart took over of his mind as he leaned hesitantly and kissed her left cheek lovingly while his eyes were closed. He halted his breath as he checked if the girl was really sleeping, seeing that she was in the dream world, he sighs in relief and blushed when he realized what he did:  
  
“What am I thinking?! I can’t take advantage of her in this situation…”  
  
Staring her lovingly, he took a deep breath and utters almost inaudibly:  
  
“How I wished be the one to protect and love you… I wouldn’t ever make you cry…I just ask for a chance…”  
  
When he realized that his heart was pounding madly only to stay in such proximity with her face, he gulped deeply and shakes his head as he sighs:  
  
“It will be better to leave now...”   
  
Then, he slowly removed his hand of her face and risked himself to plant another kiss in her face, but this time in her forehead. So when he was to stand up and turn around, his left hand was pulled faintly and making him turns around to see the reason. He was agape when he saw Tiffany with her eyes closed, but holding his hand tightly as she begs into a weak tone:  
  
“Stay with me… Jesse, please.”  
  
His heart cracked when he heard her soft demand and seeing how much sensible and fragile her semblance was. Yet, not thinking twice, he kneeled again and whispers gently as he smoothed her hair:  
  
“As I said… I’ll always be here for you… you don’t even has to ask.”  
  
He could swear that he saw a weak smile in her face after his answer. He breathes in relief since she didn’t listened his earlier confession; so he stood up and raised the covers slightly to arrange himself carefully under the blanket. He extended his left arm and giving a large space between them to make Tiffany more comfortable and decided to close his eyes to sleep. However, he opened his eyes abruptly when he realized that Tiffany made her way to him as now, they were lying down facing each other, but Tiffany was with her eyes closed. The latter found herself snuggling in his body as she nuzzled her face in his chest. At this time, his eyes were widened and his heart was thumping erratically with the emotions. He tried to call her name many times, but he gave up when he saw her sleeping peacefully so close of him and using his arm as a pillow.   
  
Not wanting to fight against the feeling, he finally decided that he would take this opportunity to show his love for her, even indirectly. So, with his free arm, he wrapped around her waist and placed in her back as he pulled her to his love embrace carefully. At first, he was extremely nervous to doing this, but his heart fluttered incessantly when he realized that she wasn’t crying anymore and now, she was the one who rested one arm around his collarbones and the another one, placed in his comfy and rigid chest.  
  
His face was burning madly as he tightened the grip around her and brushed her silky dark hair fondly. Then, he stared the window in front of him and placed his chin atop of her head, finally closing his eyes to sleep with his heart fluttering constantly. In his mind, he thanked the heavens and his mom for this meaningful opportunity to hold his beloved one right here in his arms…   
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The sun beams lightened the whole room, precisely at the amount under the covers. Tiffany flinched and peeled her eyes open slowly as she was scanning her surroundings. She immediately widened her eyes when she realized that she wasn’t in her room; then when she was about to stand up, her head was swaying a little as she still was recovering from yesterday. It was the best lay down a little more, she thinks; suddenly, she turns her head to her right and saw a message atop the nightstand. She squeezed her eyes and out of sudden, her lips moved to upward when she realized who wrote the letter:  
  
“Good morning, Fany-ah. I hope you are feeling better. I bet you must be starving now; I prepared some tasty food especially for you. Come on over if you want to, I’m waiting for you, Jesse.”  
  
Not wasting a second, she rushed to the bathroom and refreshed herself and did her morning routines. Then, after she was over, she walked towards the kitchen and a delicious scent penetrated in her nostrils as she unconsciously smiles. When she realized, she already was in the kitchen and she was staring attentively the ‘chef’ preparing carefully their meal. Her trains of thoughts were interrupted when a soft voice started:  
  
“I think you will tire yourself standing there…” Jesse turns around with a smooth smile in his face as he greeted her warmly:  
  
“Good morning, Fany. Please, have a seat while I finish this.” She returned the smile with her eye-smile and answered:  
  
“Good morning, Jesse. The smell is terrific, what are you doing?” He chuckles at her curiosity and pushed the chair for her as she seated and thank him with some tint of pink in her cheeks. Not too much after that, he placed the dishes in front of them as he seated and answered:  
  
“Isn’t that big, it’s just pancakes and some waffles.”  
  
Her mouth watered at the sight of the attracting food, for sure he knows how to cook, she thinks. Looking at him for the last time, he smiled and nodded his head as if he was saying to her to start. She smiled at herself and took a huge amount of the food and chewed slowly to enjoy the taste, it was marvelous. His smile widened as he watched her eating happily, it was almost if the last night didn’t happened; as if he didn’t saw her suffering like she was yesterday. He frowned at the memory and lowered his head deep in his thoughts. He only raised his head when she called at him softly and gaining his attention:  
  
“Jesse, are you not going to eat?” He stared at her plate and already was empty, then he shakes his head and look at his own plate, he even wasn’t able to eat too much as his mind was drifting away. Yet, he managed to answer weakly:  
  
“I’m not very hungry, don’t worry about me.”  
  
“Oh…” She barely answered and stared down with an undecipherable expression. As much he didn’t wanted to touch in the delicate subject, he must know if she really was fine. When he was about to open his mouth to speak, Tiffany started slowly:  
  
“Jesse…”  
  
“Yes, Tiffany?” She raised her head and stared deeply at his warm eyes; after sigh deeply, she whispers:  
  
“I…I don’t know how to … thank you enough, Jessi. How come you can be so good for me?”   
  
Jesse creased his eyebrows in confusion as he shakes his head:  
  
“Tiffany…you doesn’t have to—“ She interrupted him as she raised her right hand and keep looking at him with her melting eyes:  
  
“Yesterday I realized that I was living a lie with Taecyeon. A lie that waste 5 years of my life…I only could ran at the thunderstorm not even caring about me. I completely forgot that I have wonderful person who cares about me wherever I am. Never was my intention to make you guys worry about me, but after what I saw I couldn’t think in anything else…”  
  
He felt the same tug in his heart as her eyes were glimmering like if she would cry again. But she didn’t, she took a deep breath and continued as she placed her hands atop the table:  
  
“My tears already dried for … him. I thought I would be crushed now, but is not use to cry anymore. I can’t because I have my dear friends… and you to help me go on. So, I will find a way to thank you enough, for how far you did to me. Thank you for everything, Jesse.”  
  
Not holding himself, Jesse brought his hands up and placed atop Tiffany’s as he enveloped her hands warmly in his own. He stared deeply into her beautiful eyes and uttered sincerely:  
  
“You don’t have to thank me, Tiffany. It doesn’t matter wherever I am, I would still find my way to you and I’ll be there whenever you need me. This is a promise.”  
  
Once again, she felt a warm wave flooding in her being with his assurance; one tear fell by her eyes as she could stare him with a smile in her face. He gingerly thumbed her cheek and wiped the tear away as he adds warmly with a smirk in his face:  
  
“Come on. Let’s see our friend’s fight. They need our support.”  
  
She flashed a smile and nodded happily as he pulled her gently from the table. He opened the door for her and as they were walking by the corridor, Tiffany felt her face burning because their hands still were clasped together. A thought couldn’t help to pass in her head:  
  
“I just hope find someone like you someday, Jesse…”  
  
At the same time, his heart was pounding abruptly in his chest at the first moment that he held her hand. He was feeling extremely shy, but the thing is… that he didn’t want to let her go; yet he could swear that she was feeling the same thing since she didn’t pulled her hand away from his hold. A coy smile and some blush formed in his cheeks as they keep walking:  
  
“This time… I won’t let you go, Tiffany…”  
  
With that, they walked together still holding their hands, but with an innocent and pure feeling increasing in their hearts.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The day finally has come… Tiffany’s first time come and the latter couldn’t help to feel extreme nervous as she wandered alone in the locker room and trying to calm herself. She didn’t want to disappoint everyone, even more when her friends already won their respective fights and for all, she couldn’t disappoint her ‘master’. She looked to her surroundings and sighs heavily when she saw that she was alone. When she was about to lower her head, she felt a soft touch in her right shoulder; she quickly shot her head up and she was greeted with a wide smile. She smiled brightly at the person as the latter asks carefully:  
  
“Nervous?” She pouted and nodded sadly. The person chuckles and tapped her head gently as whispers:  
  
“Don’t worry, Fany. I know you are going to do your best! Fighting!”  
  
A relaxing feeling spreads in her body as she saw that smile and she couldn’t help to speak:  
  
“I was thinking that you wouldn’t see my fight, why did you take so long, Jesse?!” While she crossed her arms, Jesse chuckles nervously and scratches the back of his neck as he explains:  
  
“Sorry, Fany. I think I slept too much, but see? I came to cheering on you up!”  
  
She rolled her eyes and punched his shoulder playfully, in result he was the one who pouted and rubbed his arm. They were interrupted when they heard the host’s booming voice calling the fighters. They quickly look to each other and Jesse nodded his head as he whispers while he held her both arms:  
  
“The time has come. Trust in yourself and remember whatever it happens… I’ll be proud of you.”  
  
A genuine smile crept in her lips as she nodded and couldn’t help to lean and give a tight hug in Jesse. The latter blushed madly, but smiled as he returned the hug; they pulled back and she finally walked to the long aisle. After some steps she turn around and found him giving an encouraging smile to her, she return the smile and turn around as she took a deep breath and walk to the arena. She momentarily stopped and whisper to herself with her eyes closed:  
  
“I won’t disappoint everyone… I won’t disappoint you, Jesse…”  
  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 8 - PART II**  
  
[**Click here to listen the song**](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZsBSFb4jerY)  
  
Back at the booming dance floor, Jesse was left to ponder on his thoughts at what he just saw. Honestly, there was something very odd about that room… why would they use those machines and for what reason? Why are the names of the contestants there? It was like that those tubes were only waiting for some kind of experiment… He shook his head as there was something definitely wrong. Yet, when he was about to share his discovery to his friends, he was interrupted all of a sudden when a very attractive woman wearing a sensuous black dress approached him and asked into a flirty tone:  
  
“Alone, pretty boy?” Jesse raised his eyebrow and coughed as each second the woman leaned against him teasingly. He looked to his side as he was trying to avoid the sight of her exposed cleavage. He quickly cleared his throat and utters:  
  
“Er…not exactly, miss…?” The woman smiled and answers with her appealing voice:  
  
“Narsha… but I guess your date won’t mind if you give me just one dance, right?” He quickly coughed and explains with frenetic eyes:  
  
“Actually I believe that my partner is waiting for me and--!!!” It was too late, when Jesse realized, Narsha already pulled him to the dance floor and started with her ‘strike’. First of all, she wanted to confirm something; so she slightly turned her eyes to her side so that she could catch a glimpse of a steaming girl glaring at them, it was when she decided to intensify her ‘acts’ to see the girl’s reaction. A naughty smile formed on her lips as she brushed her hand teasingly on Jesse’s chest and wrapped it around his neck while the latter gulped loudly and carefully tried to avoid her moves as he stared at the same girl apprehensively…  
  
[Meanwhile at the bar]  
  
As soon as Tiffany dragged herself to the bar, she politely dismissed the barman as she only waited for Jesse’s return. She keep wondering what Jesse wanted to talk about with her if he wasn’t interrupted… he looked so serious, yet nervous in the way he looked at her. Nonetheless, her thoughts were interrupted when she felt a light touch in her shoulder, followed by a gentle voice:  
  
“Hey, Tiphany! What are you doing here alone?” After Taeyeon’s question, Sooyoung adds with her eyes scanning their surroundings:  
  
“Yeah, where is Jesse, Fany-ah?” Tiffany sighs deeply and shrugs her shoulders:  
  
“We were having fun and dancing, but… out of sudden, he said that he wanted to refresh himself and didn’t come back yet… honestly, I am starting to feel worried…”  
  
“Ye-yeah you should be…” Tiffany creased her eyebrows in confusion at Sooyoung’s odd statement, so she asks curiously:  
  
“Soo, what are you talking about?”   
  
“!!!”  
  
When Tiffany turned around to follow her friend’s stare, her eyes widened instantly and her mouth was hanged open at the sight. A random girl was totally over Jesse and the latter wasn’t even resisting. Unknowingly, her heart was aching at the view; maybe it hurt even more than when she caught Taecyeon with another girl… Yet, the feeling worsened when she saw the woman dragging Jesse to the dance floor and wandering her nasty hands all over him. She started to take a deep breath; a REALLY deep breath as she glared at them fiercely as she muttered angrily as she was gritting her teeth:  
  
“Who the hell does she think she is?!”  
  
Then, not holding herself any longer, she made a wrong choice to snap her fingers and call the barman. Once the latter came, she snapped hastily:  
  
“I want a triple!” The guy quickly bowed with his eyes widened at her sudden mood change and stuttered in response:  
  
“Su-sure! On the way, miss!” Not too much after that, the drink was ready and the guy quickly handed it to Tiffany, who gulped the liquid in one shot. Her friends looked at her with their eyes doubled-sized in shock as Tiffany repeated the heavy doses each time she saw the painful scene in front of her, precisely at Jesse dancing with another woman besides her. Feeling deeply worried, Taeyeon carefully placed her hand in her shoulder and spoke slowly:  
  
“Fany, I think you should go back.”  
  
“Yeah, you really need some rest, Fany-ah.” Sooyoung added with concern in her voice. Yet, Tiffany suddenly laughed thanks to the alcohol effect and whispered hastily as she still glares Jesse:  
  
“Look at him! He doesn’t care about me…! I should've known that men are all the same…” Suddenly, Taeyeon tired of her depressing state, snapped:  
  
“Why are you talking about?! Jesse is one of the most decent person that I ever knew! Why are you so bothered? You aren’t even his girlfriend!” After her words, Taeyeon quickly clamped her mouth and widened her eyes in realization. However, her words worked fast than an arrow in Tiffany’s mind… why was she so annoyed and sad with another woman flirting with Jesse? Taeyeon was right, she didn’t have the right to be like this… but how she could explain this pain in her heart? Why does it hurt like hell to see Jesse with somebody else besides… her?  
  
Unconsciously, tears started to form in the corner of her eyes as she looked down with a depressed expression. Seeing that she was hurt, Taeyeon tried to reach her shoulder and apologize, but Sooyoung held her arm and shook her head as she realized something unexpected:  
  
“Just let them be…” As soon Taeyeon as followed her stare, she nodded and waited for the scene…  
  
*[Meanwhile at the dance floor…]*  
  
Jesse tried to free himself of this woman, yet the latter practically insisted to dance with him and gave some hints of her interest in him. Then, he gulped deeply when Narsha encircled her arms around him and swayed her body teasingly at the music. He couldn’t take it anymore; he wanted to find an exit, now. When he started to look at his surroundings frenetically and searching for a familiar face, his mouth dropped when he saw Tiffany glaring at them piercingly and with an expression that he couldn’t describe. Feeling uneasy, he keeps trying to find a way to get free from her grip; yet, when he saw Tiffany staring at him for the last time with a crushed semblance, his heart ached... He frowned sadly and getting his strength, he finally gets free from her grip as he rushed to Tiffany and yells clumsily:  
  
“I’m sorry, miss. But I have to go!”  
  
Narsha was left behind as she was staring at him, who was chasing the girl apprehensively. Suddenly a fiendish smile formed in her lips as she whispers to herself:  
  
“So she is indeed important to you, huh? Hmm this sounds good… I think master will like the news…”  
  
...  
  
Tiffany walked in the ballroom aimlessly and feeling her heart aching and she was completely disoriented. Then, surprisingly, she widened her eyes when she heard the soft voice behind her:  
  
“Tiffany! Wait!” It was… him; she couldn’t face Jesse at this moment since she didn’t trust herself right now. So she squeezed her eyes and kept walking as if she didn’t want to listen to him. Yet, just when she thought that he would just give up, he didn’t. It was when she felt a hand holding her wrist carefully and made her turn around; she couldn’t raise her head since she knew the moment she did, she would end crying in front of him. She listened him panting as he finally spoke into a soft tone:  
  
“Fany… where are you going?” She bit her lips to hold her tears at the sound of his soft voice; she was trying to convince herself that he didn’t care about her, that it was just pity. Then, she hastily removed her arm from his grip and cocked her head to the front as she blurts in an annoyed tone:  
  
“Why would you care?! Weren’t you busy just then?!” Jesse creased his eyebrows in confusion towards her attitude, yet he spoke seriously:  
  
“Fany-ah… why are you acting like this? This… this is not you… tell me, what’s wrong?” Tiffany curled her fists to her sides as she was holding in her anger, suddenly she laughs bitterly at him and mocked:  
  
“Why are you asking me right now?! Weren't you having fun with that girl?! You are only wasting your time here, Jesse! Just leave me alone!”  
  
He felt a pang in his heart at her sharp words, he was hurt… but he couldn't give her up. So when Tiffany sighed heavily with her eyes shining as if her tears would fall, she turned around to leave. Yet, once again, Jesse held her by her shoulders and turned her around carefully as he stared deeply into her eyes and begged:  
  
“I don’t even know her… Please, Tiffany… don’t do this… I thought… I thought we were… friends…” Unknowingly, Tiffany felt her heart aching again at this word… “friends…” She was confused with herself; she wasn’t even able to realize what she was really feeling. But as sorrow, frustration, and the alcohol talked loudly, she tried to get away from his grip; but it was no use. So feeling cornered, she sniffed faintly and whispered sadly with her head lowered:  
  
“Yeah… I used to think the same thing, Jesse… yet, friends tell the truth to each other… say how they truly feel… but no… you keep bottling everything inside of you! What kind of friends are we?! Tell me!”   
  
Jesse squeezed his eyes closed and whispered in dismay:  
  
“If only you knew how I really feel… you wouldn’t be asking!” Then she gripped the collar of his shirt as she stepped closer to him. She stared deeply into his hazel eyes and whispered to his face:  
  
“So why are you making everything hard? Just say it, Jesse! Don’t hide it… please.”  
  
“It's not easy, Tiffany…”  
  
He was mesmerized with her face so close to his as his heart pounded madly inside him. He could feel her breath close to his lips as he saw a tint of pink on her cheeks… it was irresistible. A sudden magnetic force started to pull them together as he started to lean and whisper slowly:  
  
“Tiffany… I …I–“  
  
Suddenly he widened his eyes when he saw Tiffany oscillating in her spot, it was as if she was getting dizzy. Yet, he slightly gasped when he saw her stumbling forward as her eyes fluttered close with her last whisper before dozing off:  
  
“Je…sse…”  
  
“Tiffany!!”  
  
He acted quickly as he held her by her arms and tried to help her stand still, yet she was faltering again as she finally blacked out. He frenetically caught her at the last second before her body could hit the ground; he frowned worriedly as he thought that it was the alcohol's effect for sure. He quickly shot his head up as he was looking for their friends, so he sighed in relief when he saw a tall and a short girl running to their direction. Taeyeon held Tiffany’s chin to support her head as she took a good look of the knocked out girl’s face:  
  
“Oh my God… I told her that she shouldn’t have drunk that much… poor Fany…”  
  
Jesse shook his head as he pulled Tiffany to his hold while he put her arm around his neck and lifted her from the ground. Sooyoung whispers worriedly:  
  
“We will go back with you, she needs some rest.” Jesse nodded seriously as he carefully walked with Tiffany in his arms and added earnestly:  
  
“Yes… the party is over for us…” With that, they headed back to their dorm.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
After placing her carefully in the bed, Jesse caringly removed her heels and covered her with a warm blanket. Her friends nodded and thanked him for his help as they left the room to give him some privacy with the unconscious Tiffany. He stared at her warmly as he kneeled and whispered against her face:  
  
“Tiffany… please wait a little more… I promise I will tell you everything soon…”  
  
He stopped briefly and admired her serene face; then he sighs and combed her hair gently before planting a lovingly kiss on her cheek. So he stood up, but not without uttering his last remark and left the room:  
  
“I promise…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The next day, precisely in the afternoon, Tiffany slowly opened her eyelids and frowned sulkily thanks to her headache. She rubbed her temples and sighs:  
  
“Aish… I shouldn’t have drunk that much last night…”  
  
“Hmm… how did I end up here?”  
  
When she opened her eyes completely, she looked at her phone on her nightstand. Instantly, she widened her eyes and jolted from the bed as she rushed to the room, yelling:  
  
“OMG! Jess is fighting right now! I can’t miss his duel!”  
  
She quickly changes herself and rushed to the door, but she stopped when she heard a familiar voice:  
  
“Oh… so you are finally awake?”  
  
“Tae, yeah… by the way, thanks for help with bringing me back. I…I’m sorry for anything…”  
  
Taeyeon, who was with her arms crossed, walked silently to her and shook her head:  
  
“Don’t mention it… I was really worried and… a little mad at you… you shouldn't have drank too much, Fany-ah…” Tiffany lowered her head sadly and nodded as Taeyeon continues:  
  
“But you should thank Jesse… he was the one who carried you and brought you here…”  
  
She quickly shot her head up and stared at Taeyeon intently as the latter spoke her last sentence:  
  
“He really cares about you, Fany and… please, apologize to him… he just wanted to help you… I know that you will remember what happened sooner or later… but I just want to give you an advice…”  
  
Tiffany stared her deeply as she was trying to understand her. Slowly, flashbacks of what happened last night came to her mind and she felt a tug in her heart as she vaguely could remember the way she treated him… and it wasn’t good. She closed her eyes and frowned sadly as she realized it and slowly turned around to open the door. She halted momentarily as Taeyeon finally spoke into a wise tone:  
  
“Don’t strain yourself too much… sometimes, something that you've always wanted is right before your eyes… don’t be too late, Fany-ah…” Tiffany narrowed her eyes as she was trying to find the real meaning of Taeyeon’s advice. She could only nod and thank her as she closed the door and rushed to the arena to watch Jesse’s fight. After she left, Taeyeon sighs heavily as she whispered to no one:  
  
“Jesse… I hope you confess soon… because I’m sure that she feels the same way… she just doesn't realize it… yet…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Running by the long corridors, Tiffany could hear the cheers and screams of the audience. Yet, it wasn’t loud as her own thoughts; even feeling an annoying hangover, this was the slightest problem. Without her knowledge, her mind was only filled with Jesse… she couldn’t remember clearly what happened last night, still she couldn’t help but to feel her heart quicken its pace whenever she heard his name. But something that she could remember lively in her head… it was the painful scene of an unknown woman all over of Jesse. She frowned at the memory again as she felt a tug in her heart. She never felt like this before… even with Taecyeon, it wasn’t that strong…  
  
Suddenly she stopped in her spot and when she looked to her surroundings, she was already in front of the fighting arena. She immediately widened her eyes when she saw Jesse injured and kneeling with blood dripping from his mouth and a cut on his left cheek, also his hand was on his right rib, for sure it was aching deeply.. Her heart ached at the sight, she didn’t like to see him so wounded like this, yet when she turned her attention to Jesse’s opponent, precisely Jung Yunho, she realized that the latter was badly injured as well, certainly the fight was really balanced. Honestly, now Tiffany was even more amazed with Jesse’s strength and power because Yunho was one of the most skilful fighters in this tournament; other fighters probably wouldn’t last ten seconds in the arena…  
  
However, she wasn’t worried about that; right now the only thing that really matters was Jess’ safety. A huge amount of emotions flowed from her heart; not holding it in herself, she yells with all of her strength:  
  
“JESSEEEEE!!!!”  
  
She saw him shoot his head up as his eyes were searching for her; when their stares finally met, they held a meaningful stare as their eyes shined with their transparent emotions. So, he nodded at her assuring and slowly stood up again as Yunho was startled with his reaction. He quickly glances at Tiffany and suddenly a subtle smile formed in his lips as he realized that Jesse wasn’t giving up easily, even more now knowing that someone dear to him was cheering on him. He stared at Jesse again as the latter nodded and understood; with that, they dashed against each other, going for the kill.   
  
Yunho was about to apply his powerful blow, yet he doubled the size of his eyes when he realized that Jesse hit him right in his stomach. Jesse’s punch was enough to immobilize him as made him lose his breath and strength. Slowly Yunho’s lips moved upwards to a smile as he realized that Jesse didn’t hit him to damage his organs, but just to knock him out. His legs gave in as he stumbles to forward and fell into the ground. Instantaneously, the audience shouts in awe as the host started to make his count. After the last seconds, the screams become more excessive as they yelled Jesse’s name. The latter was panting heavily as he took a deep breath and the host raised his hand to the victory.  
  
However, before Jesse could leave the arena, he helped the staff to carry Yunho and bowed respectfully to the latter after the fight was over. Then, his eyes looked for Tiffany for the last time as the latter was sighing in relief and smiling to see him safe. They held an intense stare and Jesse finally turned around to leave the arena. Tiffany frowned confusedly, and then she rushed to the locker room, hoping to find Jesse to congratulate him, but most importantly… to apologize to him. Yet, as soon she was in the locker room, Jesse was nowhere in sight, but she quickly remembered where he should be right now. Not wasting time, she rushed to their training area… to their special place…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Tiffany was right, as soon she passed through the forest; she finally reached their place and halted immediately as soon she saw a familiar silhouette with his back facing her, watching the sunset. She puts her hand on her knees as she was recovering her breath; then after her breathing was steady again, she straightened herself and yells:  
  
“Jesse!”  
  
The latter quickly turn around as he was surprised with the sudden visit and stared at Tiffany intently:  
  
“Tiffany…”  
  
He frowned apprehensively and averts his stare to his side; she creased her eyebrows at his reaction, but she rushed to his encounter as she stops in front of him to take a good look on his face. Automatically, her mouth was hanged open as she realized that he was still bleeding; she frenetically held his cheeks and asked softly, yet showing clear concern:  
  
“My God, Jess… you still are bleeding, let me help you with that, I will come ba---“  
  
When she was about to move, Jesse who was flushed, sighs deeply and removed her hands from his face and took it inside his own. She stared at him confusedly even when her heart fluttered with his action as he raised his head and looked deep into her eyes, so he whispers gently:  
  
“Fany… there is something that I have to tell you…” Seeing that he was having a hard time to speak, she knitted her eyebrows worriedly and took one hand of his grasp and placed it on his wounded cheek:  
  
“Jess… what happened?” He took a deep breath and stare at her caringly as he spoke weakly:  
  
“I’m sorry… I tried… but… I…I can’t hide this anymore…” She started to close the gap between them as she was touched with his state. Yet, his heart was beating furiously as his face was burning in anxiety while he stared at her beautiful eyes; he gulped deeply and slowly began:  
  
“Remember when I told you… about the girl that I fell in love with?” Tiffany felt the same sharp stab in her heart, every time she wanted to take this subject from her head, there is Jesse talking about that “girl” again… She was anxious and hurt if she knew who that person was… she couldn’t bear it… so even when her heart is aching right now, she didn't say a word. She stared at him meaningfully as she tried to mask her true sorrow. So she saw him breathing deeply as his eyes shone in a different light as he sincerely uttered with his head lowered:  
  
“You must know… that girl… that girl… it’s…”  
  
  
“It’s You, Fany..” He raised his head and stared her deeply with his emotions shedding through his face, he tightens the grip in her hand and confessed sincerely, almost begging:  
  
“Tiffany… I…”  
  
…  
  
“I…I love you.”  
  
“!!!”  
  
Her mouth dropped in realization as she widened her eyes in shock. Her heart thumped furiously as she never felt it before… no words could describe what she was feeling, his honest confession touched her heart sorely. When she realized that he was staring at her apprehensively, his eyes showed so much emotions… it was like as if he was begging for her love. She tried to open her mouth, but no words came out… she didn’t know how to react… Yet, they heard:  
  
\*CLAP\* CLAP \* CLAP\*  
  
The pair quickly turns their attention to the sound’s source and they frowned confusedly when a blonde-haired guy came to their direction with a dark aura around him. He smiled wickedly as he stops and claps his hands and speaks into a sinister tone:  
  
“Awwww… what a touching scene?! It’s such a pity that you won’t be able to know her answer…”  
  
Jesse frowned angrily and instinctively placed Tiffany behind him as she looks at the guy with fear in her being; suddenly Jesse snapped furiously:  
  
“Who are you and what are you doing here?!”  
  
The guy simply chuckles evilly and snaps his finger; then suddenly some thugs aroused from behind the trees and started to corner Jesse and Tiffany. The blonde-haired guy pulls out a knife from his overcoat and started to walk to their direction and laughing like a maniac. Jesse cursed under his breath as he realized that they were surrounded and the worse... he was weak due his last fight... how they will fight against them now?   
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 9**  
  
  
  
  
“Answer me! Who are you?!” Jesse shouted angrily as he saw the wicked blonde walking around them. The latter laughs like a maniac as he plays with the knife in his hands and snaps back:  
  
“Feisty huh? Hmm, if this bothers you… I’m known as G-Dragon and I came here for one reason…”   
  
Once again, an evil smile crept in his lips as he pointed his knife to Jesse and yells:  
  
“Jesse Jung… I heard about you and what you did to my men… that was very rude, wasn't it? …now both of you will pay for that!”  
  
He nodded to his men, a group of 7 strong thugs to be exact as they held mischievous smirks on their faces… the worst is, that all of them focused at the same person… Tiffany. Realizing their evil stare, Jesse stepped back with Tiffany behind him, shielding her while he held her hand tight and whispers that everything will be ok. He felt Tiffany gasp in shock and clutched his shoulders tightly at each step they went towards them, so he yells hopelessly:  
  
“She doesn't have anything to do with this! It’s me who you want! Leave her alone!” Suddenly G Dragon snorted and shook his finger as he spoke in disdain:  
  
“Tsk tsk tsk poor Jesse, so naïve… she HAS everything to do with this! My sources also told me that she was also the one who beat up my men… yet this isn’t the main reason, actually…” Suddenly he became serious a he spoke with his teeth gritted and holding his blade next to his face:  
  
“I want to make you suffer! And it is where it will hurt the most… Hahahaha I’ll love play with her! Tell me… is she really that easy?! Hahahahahahaha!” Jesse snarled furiously as he curled his fists in ball due his rage. Not holding himself anymore, he charged against G Dragon and barked angrily:  
  
“SHUT UP! DON’T YOU DARE TALK ABOUT HER LIKE THAT!!!”   
  
“JESSE, NO!” Tiffany widened her eyes when she saw Jesse running against G Dragon, when she realized that G Dragon only was provoking him to take his focus away from her… she tried to prevent Jesse… but it was late. He was like a mad bull when he was angry, yet when he was about to punch G Dragon right in the face, the latter suddenly vanished in the air and appeared behind Jesse as he chuckled darkly and added:  
  
“Too slow!” With that, he gave a hard kick right at Jesse’s back and making the latter stumble forward. Jesse gasped and took a deep breath since the impact made him even more weak that he already was; when he was about to turn around and attack G Dragon, the latter suddenly appeared in front of him with an evil smile on his face. Jesse widened his eyes in shock, for sure is enemy was fast; but before he could defend himself, G Dragon already gave a strong knee kick right in his stomach. Jesse momentarily lost his breath as G Dragon hit his injury; he coughed some blood as he was trying to regain his breath. When he raised his head, G Dragon punched his face multiple times as more blood was dropping through his lips and nose…  
  
“Awww too bad that you are tired from your previous fight… haha this will be fun!”  
  
Suddenly the mad G Dragon grabbed Jesse hastily by his hair and laughs wickedly as he blurts out:  
  
“Now you will taste my blade!”   
  
“ARGHHH!!!”  
  
Tiffany’s heart stopped in shock as she widened her eyes in horror when she saw G Dragon slashing Jesse right in the abdomen, the scene made her being crumble down. Jesse gritted his teeth as he squeezes his eyes in pain; Tiffany was in shock when she saw his blood flowing constantly. Not holding herself anymore, she screams desperately with tears rolling by her eyes:  
  
“JESSE!!!! STOPPPP! DON’T HURT HIM!” Tiffany cries out and burst in tears as she saw Jesse being beat up again. She tried to run to save him, but four strong thugs surrounded and blocked her way; she tried to dodge, but they were many and weren’t slow like the ones she beat up the last time. She tried to fight, but thanks to her hangover, the headache was stinging painfully; yet she couldn’t just stay still and watch Jesse being hurt or even worse…  
  
“GET OUT OF MY WAY!!!” With her anger rising and teeth gritted, she managed to punch a thug right in the jaw and the another one in the stomach; while they bended in pain, she hopelessly dashed to Jesse. However, she was abruptly pulled by the other thugs as one held her arms tight and the another one her head. Tiffany couldn’t stay motionless, she tried flailing herself hastily, but the grip was really strong. She only could watch in horror as tears of pain keep rolling by her cheeks and her lips were trembling. Even trying to beg in despair, they didn’t stop to hurt Jesse, yet she didn’t give up as she flailed inside the thug’s grip:  
  
“Ple-please, don’t hurt him anymore! I will do anything! Just let him go! I beg you!”  
  
Suddenly G Dragon stopped the beating and a devilish grin crept in his lips as he turns around and repeated:  
  
“Anything?” Tiffany halted her breathing and gulped as she hesitantly nodded her head; she couldn’t stand seeing Jesse being hurt anymore. So G Dragon who was holding Jesse by his hair, hastily throws him into the ground and walked saucily towards Tiffany’s direction. The thugs held the half-unconscious Jesse by his arms as the latter didn’t even had strength to stand on his feet and was with his head lowered. Nonetheless, he faltered as he tried to raise his head to stare at the horrid scene before him. G Dragon laughs like a maniac as grabs Tiffany by her hair and nuzzled against her neck repulsively:  
  
“Now… before I finish with you… you might enjoy watch me playing with your girl hahahahaha!”   
  
Tiffany felt disgusted as G Dragon gave wet kisses on her neck and breathe against her skin. Not taking it anymore, she flailed herself and spited on his face as she yells madly:  
  
“Don’t touch me, your freaking psycho!” He snarled furiously with her action, so he grabbed her hair roughly and yelled madly to her as he pulled his knife and showed it close to her face. She widened her eyes in fear and G Dragon smirked deviously again as he waved the knife before her:  
  
“Now we will have to play into the hard way! Hahahahahahahaha!!!” Like a lunatic, he started to use his knife to cut the straps of her dress, almost exposing her skin. Jesse watched the scene before him, it was like there was something awakening inside of him. Suddenly he felt his blood boiling like he never felt before… his inner beast was starting to be unleashed… She flailed one arm free and slapped hard at G Dragon’s face; now he was really mad, so when he was about to cut her face with his knife, he yells in rage:  
  
“You little bi---“  
  
**“I-SAID-LET-HER-GO!”**  
  
Everyone looked in shock as they turned their attention to Jesse. The latter was glaring at G Dragon fiercely and suddenly, Jesse’s pupils dilated and his eyes transformed into a scintillating blue. The veins of this arms and forehead started to pump madly as his fists were really curled tightly at the point of blood drip of his palms due the strong grip and rage. The thugs barely could hold his trembling body as they were afraid of the sudden change of the latter; furthermore, his aura was completely intense and furious. He gritted his teeth tight as he growled angrily:  
  
**“DON’T-TOUCH-HER, YOU B@ST@RD!!!”**   
  
Sensing how Jesse’s chi was getting strong each second, G Dragon desperately yelled to the thugs who were holding Jesse:  
  
“Wh-what are you waiting for?! KNOCK HIM OUT NOW!” But it was too late… Jesse’s cold aura infested all over his body; when the thugs were about to release the grip and punch him down; their arms practically freezes only to touch Jesse’s arms. They became stunned with his power, so Jesse took this cue to knock them out with only one blow. The latter stood up and turned his attention to the other thugs; the latter charged against him, five to be exact, but all of them fell with one ice blow of Jesse’s hand.  
  
G Dragon was the last one remaining as he was in shock to see how Jesse who was practically wasted… beat his men in less than 5 seconds. He gulped loudly as he quickly pulled himself from Tiffany and raised his sharp knife to Jesse. So he yells madly as he charged against Jesse:  
  
“Damn you! I don’t care about the plans, now you will die!”  
  
However, when the blade was some millimeters before Jesse’s face; G Dragon couldn’t go any further. His eyes were wide open when he saw the reason why he was stopped; in the last second Jesse managed to grab his arm and freeze it at the same time, since G Dragon couldn’t move, he could only drop his mouth and double the size of his eyes in fear.   
  
Jesse glared at him furiously and finally went to a berserk. G Dragon felt the pain in his bones each time that Jesse punched him, the reason was because Jesse managed to cover his arms with ice and making his hands hard as steel. Jesse attacked him multiple times in result to it, G Dragon was slowly being unconscious due Jesse’s blows; his face was practically disfigured with blood flowing through his nose and mouth. He felt an immense pain in his stomach and chest, the place where he was receiving Jesse’s blows.   
  
“AHHHHHHH!!!” He yells in pain as he felt bones of his body breaking due Jesse’s kick against his rib. Bending in pain, he felt Jesse throwing him angrily to the hard floor, followed by Jesse’s hands in his neck as the latter was strangling him. He could see the rage and the fury forming in Jesse’s eyes as the latter growled with his teeth tightly gritted:  
  
**“NOW YOU WILL PAY!”**  
  
Tiffany widened her eyes in shock to see Jesse in this state; he was mad and almost insane. If he wouldn’t be stopped now… he would kill G Dragon for sure. Even knowing that she would put her life in risk to make her move, she couldn’t let Jesse stain his hands with blood, even an evil one…  
  
“Jess, stop! Don’t do that!”  
  
Jesse, who was tightening the grip around G Dragon’s neck, barely listened his surroundings, right now he wanted take the life away from his maniac. Yet, when Jesse felt his shoulders being tugged, he was starting to be conscious, yet the power inside him still pressed him to kill Dragon. He was divided with the inner voice and Tiffany’s voice. Then, the latter abruptly turn his face to her and made him to look in her eyes. She gasped to see his translucent blue eyes; but she didn’t give up as she cupped his face and cries desperately. She looks deep in his eyes as she spoke with her lips trembling:  
  
“Jesse! Don’t stain your hands with blood! You are not a KILLER!”   
  
“Please, I beg you…”  
  
When he realized that her voice was cracking due to her tears, he felt a familiar feeling taking over of his heart when he saw her face. It was the love he felt for her that slowly tamed his berserk mode; suddenly he felt a sharp headache pumping in his head. Then, he slowly loosens the grip at G Dragon’s neck, who was already was unconscious and Jesse held both sides of his head as he tried to contain his pain. He squeezed his eyes shut due to the pain, it was when he felt a warm touch holding his head, and then he opened his eyes to meet Tiffany’s worried stare. At the same time, his eyes started to return to the original color, in that case, his hazel eyes; and the veins hid under his skin again.  
  
Tiffany was with one hand holding his face and her other arm was holding her ripped dress. Yet, she sighs in relief when she heard the familiar and soft voice:  
  
“Tif..fany… is… is that you? I – I’m so-sorry…” She quickly nodded as tears flew by her eyes while she watched Jesse's injured state. He frowned slightly when he saw her ripped dress, so he stood up faltering with her help and he carefully removed his jacket and whispers weakly:  
  
“Please… put this on…” Tiffany sniffed and nodded as she haphazardly wiped her tears and put on his jacket. Then, she gasped in worry when she saw the blood still flowing at his abdomen. Jesse stumbled in his spot; he was deeply feeble after this fight. Seeing that he could fall, Tiffany quickly wrapped her arm around his waist and the another one, she grabbed his left arm and placed it around her shoulder. She looked at him deadly worried and whispered softly:  
  
“I’ll get some help. But first, we need to get back to your room first. Hold me tight ok?” Jesse who was with his eyes closed, nodded slowly as he used all of his strength not to faint and make his way back to his dorm.   
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
“He is here, Fany-ah!” Taeyeon and Sooyoung brought HeeChul to his dorm to treat the wounded Jess, they were doing everything to help him since Tiffany called her friends as soon they reached Jess’ dorm. HeeChul doubled the size of his eyes when he saw Jess’ situation, so he worriedly snapped:  
  
“Oh my God! We need take him to the infirmary and quickly!”  
  
“We can’t! If the staff knows that Jesse was wounded in a fight out of the tournament, he could be disqualified from the Duel!” Taeyeon firmly prompted as Sooyoung blurts frenetically:  
  
“Besides, we don't have any idea who could order this attack! There is something fishy here and we could put Jesse’s life even more in danger if we expose him now!”  
  
“Oppa… please… help him. I heard that you have medical skills in your training… I can’t... see him even more hurt… please…”   
  
HeeChul sighs in defeat after Tiffany begged him to help Jesse. He took a deep breath and walked to the wounded one and spoke into a determined tone at the girls:  
  
“I will need clean towels, needles, alcohol and fast!” The girls nodded and rapidly got the items as they gave it to HeeChul, who was analyzing the cut carefully in Jess’ abs, good thing the cut wasn’t deep. Then, he removed Jesse’s shirt entirely, and applied all the items as he treated every single wound with Tiffany’s help. As soon the moment that the alcohol touched his injury, Jesse nearly groaned and squeezed his eyes to contain his pain. Tiffany couldn’t help but to stare at him completely crushed while Heechul did his job; acting quickly, she reached his palm and thumbed his skin gently to help him ease the pain. It worked since she saw Jesse’s furrows disappear from his forehead slowly…  
  
After some minutes, Jesse eventually became unconscious since he was exhausted. Tiffany promptly took over the responsibility to watch over him; her friends tried to convince her to that they would accompany her as well since she was really tired, but she disagreed since her friends were tired. So she caringly says her farewells and gave a tight hug to Taeyeon and Sooyoung. She thanked their help and the latter informed that they would help her and Jesse anytime they needed help.  
  
Tiffany was left behind only with Heechul as the latter finally treated all of his injuries. She dragged herself beside Jess’s bed; her heart was aching painfully while she saw him all bruised. Every time she would look at his fragile state, tears flew by her eyes as she remembered his words:  
  
“That girl… it’s you…”…“…I–I love you, Tiffany…”   
  
“You already know the truth, don’t you?”   
  
Tiffany quickly shot her head up as she heard Heechul’s question. He stared at her eyes expectantly, so she looked at Jesse again and blushed as she lowered her head. Still with her eyes fixed at the sleeping Jesse, she whispers faintly:  
  
“Am I that obvious? How did… how did you found it?”  
  
She heard him letting a deep sigh as he approached her. He placed his hand on her shoulder to get her attention, so he starts sincerely:  
  
“Because you are not looking at him at the same way… your eyes show confusion and… pain…”  
  
Suddenly one tear fall by her eyes as she holds tight Jess’s hand; she squeezed her eyes shut as she speaks in dismay:  
  
“Isn’t everyday that you find out that your friend is in love with you… still, I can’t even think of this right now… I can’t forgive myself if something more were to happen to him...”  
  
“So… when he recovers… what will you say to him? Now that you already know the truth, you can’t hide yourself anymore, Tiffany.”  
  
She remains silent as she still was staring at Jesse sadly; then deciding to give her time to think, Heechul turned around to leave, but not before uttering his last remark:  
  
“Think about it… Honestly, I never found someone like him… he would sacrifice anything just to see you happy… he loved you since the beginning even when you were totally unaware of his feelings… he really loves you, Tiffany. Remember that…”  
  
With that, he bowed and opens the door to leave. His words created a huge commotion in her mind; so that means that Jesse… he loved her all this time? She closed her eyes as she breathed heavily when everything started to make sense. His actions, his stare, his touches… everything were a mere reflection of his true feeling for her, all this time she was being a hostage by her own feelings thinking that another girl captured Jesse’s heart… but no, it was always her… always…  
  
When she opened her eyes, she still saw him completely unconscious. Accidently, her eyes traveled by her body where she caught a glimpse of several injuries. Unable to control her crying anymore, she sobbed badly and burst into tears seeing him so hurt. She placed her hand in his face as she caressed his wound and mourned shakily:  
  
“Je-Jesse… why does you always ge-get hurt be-because of me?!” She leaned and hugged his fainted body and whispered wavering against his chest:  
  
“I…I do-don’t know what to do… but I… I don’t wanna lose you… please, wake up… wake up…”  
  
Eventually, Tiffany cried until she fell asleep while she hugged Jesse tightly.   
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The next morning, Tiffany squirmed and stirred slightly when she realized that the sunbeams invaded Jesse’s room. Blinking to regulate her vision, she blushed immediately when she realized that her face was so close to his. Yet, she couldn’t move an inch; she could only stare at his peaceful face while he was sleeping; she sighs in relief when she realized that his semblance was a little better this morning. She bit her lower lip doubtfully as she brushed his bangs to the side, just to have a clear view of his face. However she frowns sadly as she scanned his face to see his wounds.  
  
Then, sighing deeply, she stood up to refresh and feed herself. Also she decided she wouldn’t leave at his side, not because she had to stay with him, but because she couldn’t leave him alone, not after everything that has happened… She passed the whole day treating and cleaning his injuries; she even managed to blush when she had to remove his shirt to change the bandage around his torso. She was in trance with his toned abs and muscular physic. Yet, it wasn’t time for that and certainly, it wasn’t time to check him out even when the latter was unconscious…  
  
She let a big sigh as her hopes were decreasing as Jesse didn’t move or wake up the whole day; obviously she was more worried than ever. At night while she was dabbing a moistened towel on his cheek to treat his cut, she felt the same heartache like the previous day. She stopped her motion as she stared at his face attentively; it wasn’t that hard to admit that she hated seeing him suffering. Suddenly, she placed her hand in his left cheek and caressed it gently as she whispers:  
  
“Jess…if you are listening to me… please do anything… I need to know if you really are ok…”  
  
Yet, nothing came, just the silence. Tiffany reached his hand and caressed it with her thumb gently as she mumbles with her eyes closed:  
  
“You know… I miss your smile… I miss your kind words… I miss everything you do…” She chuckled bitterly as tears fell by her eyes and she keeps caressing his hand. She took a deep breath and opens her eyes to find Jess still unconscious. Then, she sniffed loudly as she was kneeling at the side of his bed and mumbled remorsefully:  
  
“Jesse… I–I’m so sorry for everything! I was weak and couldn’t even protect you! I–I would do anything just to see you safe again…”   
  
Slowly, while she mumbled her apologizes to him with a contrite heart, she end up sleeping kneeled as she held his hand and her face washed by her tears.   
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
In the next day, Tiffany found herself sleeping comfortably at a soft surface. Yet, missing something, her consciousness quickly kicked in as she shot her eyes open and realized that she was laid in Jesse’s bed, yet… no Jesse in sight… Wait! NO JESSE IN SIGHT?! Her heartbeat doubled as she frenetically jumped from the bed and scanned his whole dorm… only to find herself alone. Starting to hyperventilate, she was in a verge of breaking down in despair… if something happened to him? What it someone found him and hurt him even more? These questions tortured her mind as she couldn’t think properly; yet she was about to barge out of his room, something caught her attention, precisely a letter with her name and placed on top of the nightstand. She gulped and frowned when she recognized the letter… it was Jesse’s letter…   
  
However, she took a deep breath and opened the letter carefully. She sat on the bed as she started to read the content gingerly:  
  
“***Dear Tiffany,***I wanted to thank you for everything you done, I know that you were taking good care of me. But after what happened, I can’t risk your life because of me, so if they want me, I’ll be waiting for them and at least they will leave you alone and untouched. Please, don’t blame yourself for anything. To be honest, if it wasn’t for you, I wouldn't know what would've happened. And the last thing, I know I might let you be frustrated with my confession… I don’t regret what I told you, but don’t feel bad about me; I know that you only saw me as a friend or even an old brother… I understand, but I can’t lie telling myself that I don’t love you when it is not true. Tiffany… I love you deeply. It doesn’t matter where I am, I won’t forget you. Please, be happy… Good bye.***Jesse.***”  
  
Slowly, tears started to roll by her eyes as she read the letter’s content. Once she was finished, the heartache was inevitable; she couldn’t explain why her heart was so hurt… he really left without at least talking with her… They were good friends after all… Her lips were trembling and her tears fell and moistened the letter in her hands. Tiffany found herself lost as she slightly sobbed and mumbled woefully. Seated on the bed, she stared at the paper blankly like she didn’t know what to do…  
  
Tiffany sniffed loudly as she closed her eyes and pressed the letter against her heart while fresh tears washed her face. Why was she so hurt? Of course, she really cared about Jesse and it was undeniable the feeling of safety and protection when she was around him… still, is that all? Jesse could read her like an open book like no one ever did; neither her family nor friends nor even Taecyeon…She let herself blush or let her heart beat uncontrollably whenever she was close to him… are these signs that she was starting to see him more than a friend?  
  
Her mind was a mess, it was only a few days that she broke up with Taecyeon after she discovered his betrayals, yet… she could remember clear as the water that when she was breaking down in tears and deception… Jesse was the one who ran at her in the middle of the storm; he wiped her tears and comforted her with the most care. Every single day, there was Jesse for her and saying that everything would be all right; there was Jesse to hug her and ease her pain; and there was Jesse to love her when she thought that no one would… he was always there, just as he promised…  
  
His promise…he genuinely promised that he would always be there, but…where is he now? How much it hurts when you lost your shelter… your sanctuary…your safe support… Part of her wanted to run and find Jesse, but the other part keep asking what she would do when she finds him? What would she say? She burrows her face in her hands as she shirked hopelessly, still crying:  
  
“What should I do?!”  
  
Slowly, memories of their time together started to flood in her head. All the moments crushed into her mind and when she realized that five years doesn’t compare what she had in practically one month and a few days with Jesse… She always would get the feeling that she has met him long ago… Jesse made her feel things that she never felt for Taecyeon; he made her feel safe, happy and now… loved. Her heart started to beat erratically when she remembered Heechul’s words:  
  
“I never found someone like him… he would sacrifice anything just to see your happiness… he loved you since the beginning even when you were totally unaware of his feelings…Tiffany, he really loves you, remember that…”  
  
While this sentence repeated in her mind, she chocked in her tears and she pressed the letter even tighter against her chest. After his words, her heartbeats were furiously under her skin as she never felt this before. It was when she realized how it hurts to not have Jesse by her side, how hurts when she was jealous thinking that he loved someone else; how it hurts… when he wasn’t there when her heart fluttered and screamed his name. Momentarily, she stopped her tears to gasp deeply in shock; she put her trembling hand on her lips with her eyes widened. The warm feeling spread all over her body as she whispered shakily and finally realized what her heart was saying to her:  
  
“Oh my God… I–I must find him! I’m not going to let you go again, Jesse!”   
  
She quickly stood up and rushed to the door as she left his dorm to her pursuit. While she ran aimlessly in all the possible places in the island; her heart keeps thumping in her anxiety as she thinks deeply:  
  
“Please… don’t go yet, Jesse. Wait for me!”  
  
She passed the rest of the afternoon looking for him, but he was nowhere in sight. Yet, the sun was setting and it would be even harder to find him in these conditions, but she couldn’t wait anymore. She stopped briefly to recover her breath and felt her heart aching as she couldn’t find him. Then, when tears were almost falling by her eyes, she gasped when she remembered one place. She dashed and ran more than her legs could take; yet in her mind, she keeps praying:  
  
“Please, be there…”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
When she finally reached their training spot, she widened her eyes and breathed deeply when she saw the same silhouette watching the setting sun. He was unaware of her presence; not holding herself anymore, tears fell by her eyes as she yells warmly:  
  
“Jesse!!!” He quickly turns around to meet her teary eyes with his moistened and widened ones. He opens his mouth to speak, but no words came out as he held tight the strap of his duffel bag. Then, recovering his voice, he asks softly as he averts his stare to the ground:  
  
“What are you doing here, Tiffany?” She frowned and gulped deeply as she blurts, feeling hurt:  
  
“Is that it? First, you told me that you love me and now you are leaving me?! Tell me what kind of love is that?!”  
  
He closed his eyes to prevent more tears to come and utters quietly with a tug in his heart:  
  
“It’s more complicated than you think… It will be better for both of us if we part ourselves now.”  
  
“Bu-but are you still leaving?! And what about all your effort? Are you really giving up?!”  
  
“I… I don’t care about this anymore…” She gasped and barked into a frustrated tone:  
  
“So… were you were planning this the whole time? Leaving me only with a letter and disappear?! I’m starting to ask to myself if you really mean it when you said that you loved me!”  
  
“!!!”  
  
“Never doubt of my love for you! I didn’t lie and I never will!” His tone rose firmly with the truth, then she gasped in surprise and sighs deeply. Yet, she continues with a soft tone with her eyebrows frowned:   
  
“So… why don’t you explain to me then?” He raised his head and breathed heavily. So he stared at her eyes earnestly and began:  
  
“When I entered in the tournament… I only had one objective… to find answers about my past… yet, the moment I saw you for the first time… I started to feel things that I have never felt before…”  
  
He took a deep breath as he averts his stare to the sun and whispers sincerely:  
  
“I can’t explain in words how you made me feel… all I know it’s when I met you, I knew you were different… I couldn’t help to feel more and more attached to you… yet each moment with you, my heart keep longing to see you again…”   
  
She couldn’t help to blush at his sentence and feel her heart beating erratically again. Then he changed his deep stare to her eyes and uttered truthfully, yet showing some sadness within his eyes:  
  
“But the moment I saw you and Taecyeon kissing each other… I felt my heart shattering into pieces… I couldn’t understand the reason until I realized the true feeling… it was because I already loved you…”  
  
She frowns sadly at the memory and even more when she saw a tear rolling by his eyes. He took a deep breath and his voice became even softer:  
  
“I never fell in love with anyone before… It was you who taught me what love means…you brought a new light to my heart when I already thought that I couldn’t find love… that’s why I love you unconditionally. Don’t worry, I know that always will be your friend… and I understand that you don’t feel the same way…”  
  
“I will always carry you in my heart... Goodbye… Tiffany…”  
  
He stared at her meaningfully for the last time and hesitantly turned around to leave, yet with his crushed with the idea to not see her again. Feeling a heartache, she wouldn’t let him escape again; so when he was getting far from her, she yells at the top of her lungs:  
  
“JESSE! WAIT!”  
  
Not thinking twice, she ran to his direction and stopped right before him. She felt touched to see tears flowing by his eyes; then, he closed his eyes and let her speak. Suddenly, she felt her own tears forming in the corner of her eyes as she whispers softly with her head lowered:  
  
“Jesse, you really are a babo!” He slowly opens his sad eyes to meet her warm stare; he blushed as she stepped closer and starts gently:  
  
“I can’t believe that is the first time that you missed something about me…” He tilted his head to side and frowned confusedly at her. Then, she raised her head and stared at him warmly; slowly a smile crept in her lips as she felt her heart racing madly against her ribs. This time it’s for real, so she whispers:  
  
“But I won’t show to you with mere words this time…Let me show you what I mean…”  
  
Then, Tiffany smiled genuinely for the last time as she cupped his face gently and slowly closes the gap between them as she pressed her lips softly against his own. Jesse widened his eyes in shock as his heart was beating furiously inside his chest as if it going to jump out of his ribs. He felt his whole being burning with his overwhelming feeling as his legs were giving in, this must be a dream, he thinks. Yet, Tiffany was right before him and kissing him gently as her lips captured his upper ones endearingly He couldn’t think properly as finally he decided to stop thinking and let his heart guide his body. He finally closed his eyes and raised his hands as he held her arms and thumbed it affectionately; if he really was made by ice, he certainly would be melted at this instant… it was amazing…  
  
To Tiffany’s side, everything makes sense at this moment; Jesse was her missing puzzle, the part that she always searched for. The answer was right in their kiss; she never felt something so tumultuous inside her. Even for a short time, now she was sure of her feeling… she smiled in realization as the answer always lied deep in her interior… it was love… the pure love that grew rapidly in her interior, it was always there and she didn’t knew, yet it finally bloomed in her heart. She caressed his cheek lovingly as she broke the kiss slowly. Then, opening her eyes, she touched his forehead with her own and whispered breathlessly:  
  
“I…I love you.”  
  
“Wh-what?” He asked feeling completely touched as he snapped his eyes open and stared her deeply, still looking for signs of assurance. Seeing his expectant eyes, she eye-smiled brightly with a tint of pink in her cheeks as she utters more seriously this time and caressed his face:  
  
“Jesse… I love you. I’m sorry for take so long.”  
  
Tears rolled by his eyes as he furrowed his eyebrows gently and whispers weakly:  
  
“You-you do?” She smiled widely and nodded her head assuring. Seeing that he still was in shock, completely overwhelmed with her confession; she chuckles at his blank face and speaks warmly:  
  
“\*Chuckles\* What I have to do to show you that I really love yo-!!!”  
  
Her sentence was cut when Jesse embraced her tightly and burrows his face in her neck as he whispers gently:  
  
“Thank you so much, Fany…”  
  
Then, she smiled and closed her eyes as she returned the hug at the same intensity and rubbed his back gently. Suddenly, he pulled himself from the hug slowly to stare at her eyes lovingly; without warning, he held her face so caringly and finally touched her lips with his own very fondly. Now it was Tiffany’s turn to blush vigorously; she widened her eyes in surprise, but soon her eye-lids closed as she returned the endearing kiss. Their hearts raced uncontrollably inside their chests as his hand traveled gently by her face to her dark brown hair and descending to hook around her waist and bring her close to his body.   
  
He tilted his head to the side as he could kiss her fully. Even being inexperienced in the kiss thing, he managed to learn quickly as he sucked her lower and plump lips, eventually creating smacking sounds due the voluptuous kiss. Tiffany felt herself willingly to crumble down in his arms as his lovingly, yet possessives touches made her feel protected and wanted. Her hands found the way to his neck as she pulled him even more to the embrace. With his free hand, Jesse tangled in the locks of her dark hair and caressed gently. Unconsciously, she moaned in delight with his action; certainly, it was the best kiss that she had because she could feel love in every single small action coming from him.  
  
Slowly, both of them pulled from the kiss completely breathless and then, they smiled lovingly to each other. Tiffany gave at him her most shinny mega-watt smile as she whispers still breathlessly:  
  
“I longed for this lips for awhile… for sure, it was worthy… are you sure that you never kissed before?”  
  
She chuckles as she saw the blush in his cheeks while he looked down. He raised his head and nibbled his lower lip coyly, staring her eyes lovingly:  
  
“Actually… it was my first kiss…”  
  
She opens a huge smile and chuckles again as she wrapped her arms around his neck and caressed his nape. She tilted her head to her side and started to close the gap again as their noses touched. Finally, she whispers hotly against his lips, making him shiver a little:  
  
“Good to know… that means your lips only belong to me…”  
  
Her face become serious as her eyes shinned with love; then she closed the gap again as she pulled him for a passionate kiss and caressed his nape neck. However, the sun finally settled, bringing the night along; but the two lovers didn’t care about their surroundings, the only thing that matters it’s this moment. Between the ravishing kisses, they managed to whisper lovingly to each other into a passionate embrace:  
  
“I love you, Tiffany.”“I love you too, Jess.”  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 10**  
  
  
  
“Ple-please, I wo-won’t do it again, maste-- Arghhhh!!!”  
  
“SHUT UP WHEN I AM TALKING WITH YOU, IDIOT!” Mr. barked angrily as he punched G Dragon’s ribs followed by a kick in his face and making the latter bend in pain due his remainder injuires. He grabs the blonds’ hair roughly and whisper against his face into a harsh tone:  
  
“Don’t you know that if the Jung was killed that time… you could mess my research of twenty and three freaking years?!”  
  
G Dragon tried to use his strength to stand up, but he held his abdomen as blood was dripping from his mouth. Then, he took a deep breath and barked back:  
  
“I was only doing what you said! You told me to find the \*\*\*\*\*\*\* of the ship incident! \*Deep breath\* Nothing of this would happen if he wasn’t trying to defend his girl! I tried to have some fun with her, but he transformed into a monster with that freaking sparkling eyes!”  
  
Suddenly Mr. D turns around and stared at him with wide eyes as he asks still shocked:  
  
“You said… sparkling eyes?!”  
  
“Yeah… but I wouldn’t ever imagine that… he could be that furious and stron---!!!”  
  
Out of sudden, Mr. D thrown himself against G Dragon as he grabs the latter by the neck and hastily slammed him against the wall. He glared at him furiously and he tights the grip of G-Dragon’s neck and snapped madly:  
  
“Do you any have idea what you done?! You just unleashed his inner beast, your maggot! He can be practically invincible if he discovers his true strength!” G Dragon found hard to breathe with Mr. D hands squeezing his neck really hard, so he managed to utter weakly to his defense:  
  
“Bu-but… \*cough\* \*cough\* he becomes weak… when his girl it’s in danger…once we have her… we can make him do anything \*cough\* \*cough\*” Suddenly the grip loosened a little as Mr. D was thinking deeply, yet he grabbed G Dragon by his collar and demanded fiercely:  
  
“Tell me her name now or you can say goodbye to your miserable life!”  
  
“T-Tiffany… Hw-Hwang!!!” Listening her name, Mr. D finally released from his neck and to trace his ingenious plan while G Dragon coughed constantly to recover his air. A sinister smile formed in his lips as he brushed his black goatee and finally utters into a dark tone:  
  
“\*Chuckles\* so the dear Jesse has a girlfriend… this will be interesting… HAHAHHAHAHA!!!”  
  
“That means… I can leave now?” G Dragon asked in fear as he cut Mr. D laughter’s. The latter abruptly turn around with a malicious smile in his face. He snapped his finger and out of sudden, his thugs grabbed G Dragon hastily as the latter yells in despair:  
  
“I thought we had a deal!” Mr. D just laughs maliciously as he adds into a cold tone:  
  
“Yes, we had… your information was extremely valuable to me… in return to not kill you for your mistake… you will be the first one to prove my punishment… or I must say… my experiment!!!”   
  
“No! Please don’t! Noooooooooo! Everything was Taecyeon’s idea!” G Dragon yells like mad and tried to flail to get free of the thug’s grasp. Yet, Mr. D managed to tap his face cockily as he says:  
  
“I will guarantee that you won’t disobey me this time…oh and don’t worry… I have plans for your friend Taecyeon as well…take him!”  
  
“Nooooooo!!!”  
  
Mr. D finally closed the door as the G Dragon’s yells spreads in the corridor while he was being carried by his thugs. Massaging his temples, another evil smile formed in his face as he whispers and walked to his table to get a Jesse’s pic:  
  
“\*Chuckles\* I will take everything you love the most, little Jesse… now, I must have a good talk with someone else… hahahahahhahaha!!!”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Close to the midnight, a couple was walking by the desert corridor with their hands romantically intertwined. Jesse and Tiffany couldn’t help to smile to theirselves after they founded how their hands fit perfectly together; it was like it really was made for each other… like everything else. While walking down the aisle, they were into a warm silence, yet their hearts and minds raced madly. Suddenly, Tiffany suppressed a smile when she stole some glances of a distant Jesse and found the latter blushing with a coy smile in his face… for sure his heart was floating in the air, just like hers…  
  
Her smile widened at the cute sight, in response, she squeezed his hand affectionately to get his attention. Then, he quickly shot his head up only to find her kind eyes; they held a meaningful stare as Jesse finally stopped and stood before her. She looked at him confusingly, but for a short time since she was awestruck when he flashed a gorgeous smile only dedicated to her. Her cheeks burned due that smile and out of sudden, he reached her left hand and brought to his lips to plant a gentle kiss. Her heart swayed inside her chest due these signs of love and to be honest… she didn’t wanted to end it.  
  
It was when she snapped from her inner thoughts when Jesse delicately pulled her by her hand against his body. She became flustered with such tiny gap between them as she stared at him shyly; yet she couldn’t contain the happiness in her heart, words couldn’t express what she was feeling… and it really was amazing… Jesse slowly encircled his arms around her waist into a lovingly embrace; she let herself blush and chuckles when he pulled her for a tight hug and whispers softly to her ear:  
  
“I still can’t believe that you are mine… this it’s like a dream that I don’t want ever to wake up…”  
  
Touched by his words, she started to ponder her thoughts and lamented to herself for being so unaware of his feelings. Her heart never felt so peaceful and loved as she was feeling with him. With her relationship with Taecyeon it was most the body-to-body thing, they barely talked and honestly, whenever she tried to bring some subject… Taecyeon seemed to not care… How could she be so dumb when an almost perfect being loved her so dearly?   
  
She pulled from his hug gently to stare deeply into his eyes. His eyes were so tender, so innocent and lovingly that she melted again within his stare. Her hand caressed his face gingerly and rested in his shoulders as she whispers caringly:  
  
“No, Jessi. This is not a dream… My heart already belongs to you since from the start…I just have to realize that…”  
  
A wide smile formed in his face due her honest words, she smiled as she cupped his face gently. Then, she eye-smiled at him genuinely and stay on the tip-toe to plant a tender kiss in his forehead with her eyes closed; he blushed furiously, yet become dazzled with her act. In reaction, he touched her forehead with his and whispers warmly:  
  
“My dream came true ever since I found you…”  
  
Suddenly, with the lovingly mood around the couple, didn’t took a lot of time to Tiffany feel the impact of his words as her heart fluttered endlessly. Her face becomes serious as their eyelids started to close and they leaned against each other. When their lips were mere millimeters away, the door behind them swung open abruptly followed by a storming voice:  
  
“WHAT’HELL WERE YOU, YOUNG LADY?! DON’T YOU KNOW HOW MANY TIMES THAT I CALLED YOU?! YOU BETTER HAVE A GOOD EXCUSE OR I WILL--!!!???”  
  
“Eh?!”  
  
Ajhuma a.k.a Taeyeon immediately stopped her bark and widened her eyes when she saw the blushing couple before her. Jesse and Tiffany were red as a tomato when Taeyeon started to sputter the words and pointed to them accusingly:  
  
“Wa-wait a minute! You! You supposed to be resting!” She says seriously as she points to Jesse and then, she turns her attention to Tiffany who was pouting. Taeyeon frowned in confusion to the shy couple and madly barks against Tiffany again:  
  
“Fany-ah! Don’t you think that we were deadly worried?! Why were you so busy that you couldn’t ca--!!”  
  
“Oh!”  
  
It was when it finally hit her when she spotted Jesse and Tiffany’s hands intertwined and the blush in their faces. Her mouth dropped in realization as she change stares between them. She finally has sure when she saw them smiling contently at her. She gasped and pointed to them shakily:  
  
“Oh-My-God…are - are you two--?” The couple looked to each other and they smiled lovingly in response, and then, back to Taeyeon as they nodded their head happily. It was when Taeyeon couldn’t hold her smile anymore, so she yells happily as she grabs the couple for a tight hug and blurted:  
  
“Oh Heaven must be praised! Finally Tiphany stopped to be so slow! This is a miracle!”  
  
“Hey, I’m right here, you know?!” An annoyed Tiffany snapped as she crossed her arms with a bored expression. Taeyeon quickly pulled her from a tight hug and ruffled her hair playfully as she beamed:  
  
“Ya Tiphany! You know I’m kidding! But I’m so happy for you! Awww look you two! You are perfect for each other!”  
  
She adds with a dreamy face and clasped her hands together in joy. Of course the couple chuckles shyly at her remark and hug her back. Not too much after that, it was Sooyoung who aroused from the room and asked to the folks confusedly:  
  
“Hey! What is this commotion?!” Before Tiffany could answer, Taeyeon pointed to them and blurts with her eyes shining in happiness:  
  
“They are finally together!!!” Sooyoung widened her eyes and asked incredulously: “What?! For real?!” Taeyeon quickly nodded and laughs at Sooyoung’s blank face. After the information finally sunk in, Sooyoung smiled widely and hug the couple tight as well and yells:  
  
“It’s really a miracle! Good thing Tiffany didn’t made him wait too much! At least, she finally confessed, right Jesse?!” Tiffany frowned her eyebrows confusedly as she directs her attention to Jesse and asks slowly with her eyebrow raised:  
  
“What do you mean that I finally confessed? Wait a minute! How did you already know about this?”  
  
“Well…” Jesse started nervously as he scratches the back of his neck and laughs weakly. It was then her friends started nonchalantly:  
  
“Awww Fany… don’t blame him! I mean, everyone already knew!” Taeyeon adds recklessly as she waved her hand dismissively and Sooyoung continues:  
  
“Yeah…but the only person who should know… didn’t have any idea of his feelings… right, Fany-ah?! Hahahhaa…”  
  
“Awww this isn’t fair! You guys should tell me this sooner! I’m always the last to know everything!”  
  
“Errr… ok! Now we will give us guys some privacy!” Taeyeon laughs nervously and grab Sooyoung along back to the room, but not before the latter yells:  
  
“Good night and good luck, Jeshe!” He chuckles at the odd girl’s antics and waved as they finally entered in the room. When he turns around, he sighs and smiled at the sight of a pouting Tiffany, who was with her arms crossed. Then, he stealthily made his way behind her and wrapped his arms around her waist tightly. She gasped at the touch, but quickly gave in as he nuzzled in her neck and plants a soft kiss in her cheek. They blushed at the contact even not saying a word; he placed his chin in her shoulder as she thumbed his forearm very endearingly. Moments later, he heard her sigh as she whispers gently:  
  
“I feel like an idiot after half world already knew that you loved me… but I didn’t had any clue…I – I’m sorry, Jessi… I’m sorry for getting you on trouble and made you pass for hard times because of me…”  
  
He couldn’t help to feel a tug in his heart when he heard her sad tone. The poor girl keeps blaming herself for her dullness; yet, he sighs and nuzzled affectionately in her nape to inhale her sweet scent. He smiled when he felt her body shivering slightly at his move, so he gently turn her around and look deeply in her eyes as he starts kindly:  
  
“Fany… don’t blame yourself anymore…we are together now… that’s all that matters…”  
  
“But Jess-“He shushed her caringly as he placed his finger in her lips. He raised his hand and caressed her cheek very fondly as he whispers:  
  
“And you are not an idiot. I didn’t want to confuse you, Fany…I had to be sure before tell you my true feelings…” Moved by his words, she whispers honestly in return:  
  
“Each moment with you… it proves that you had my heart since the beginning…”  
  
Jess was slight agape with her confession, yet he managed to flash a glowing smile to her. His hand caressed her neck gently as he leaned and planted a lovingly kiss in her cheek. They blushed furiously as they hearts were beating madly inside their chests. Looking to each other with love, Tiffany pulled him from a tender hug as she wrapped her arms around his neck. They stood there just holding each other and enjoying the other’s warm; unfortunately, Jesse realized that already was late and Tiffany need rest since she passed these days taking care of him. It was when an idea suddenly popped in his mind as he pulled from the hug and whispers:  
  
“Fany… do have plans for tomorrow?” She pursued her lips and shook her head cutely as she answers:  
  
“I guess not… why?” Then, a wide smile formed in his lips as he quickly pulled her arms and pecked her lips softly:  
  
“Would you like to go out with me… tomorrow?” A blush bloomed in her cheeks as she coyly asks with her big brown orbs:  
  
“You mean like… a date?” He was the one who blushed furiously this time, yet he nodded his head and nibbled his lower lips anxiously for her answer. Suddenly a bright smile formed in her face as she quickly nodded her head in response:  
  
“I would love to!” He beamed at her answer as he pulls her for a tight hug and utters:  
  
“Ok! Wait for me here tomorrow at 10 am.” She chuckles at his excitement and gingerly pulled his collar to give a soft kiss in his neck. He smiled drowsily and tried to keep his cool:  
  
“All right! Errmm… I mean…thanks. Well, good night, Tiffany. Sweet dreams.” She grinned and replied:  
  
“Night, Jessi. See you tomorrow.” He lowered his head to give a final and tight hug. When they parted, he plants a gentle kiss in her right cheek, as Tiffany finally turn around to open the door. She took a last look on him and smiled lovingly as he waved caringly. With her door finally closed, he beamed and punched the air in true happiness as he blurts:  
  
“I’ll do everything to make this date unforgettable! Oh… I need to work this now!”  
  
With that, he rushed to his room and start with his plans, still smiling like a fool and his heart beating like mad.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
In the next day, Tiffany changed her outfit for the millionth time and looked to herself in the mirror as she was trying to find the perfect look for their ‘so called date’. She decided to take a light outfit since she didn’t had any idea where Jesse going to take her… and because the fact that she didn’t knew fancy places in this island for a date. Finally, she managed to decide quickly when she heard a soft knock in the door. She widened her eyes and ran recklessly around her room:  
  
***“OMG! OMG! OMG! He is here! He is here!”***  
  
“Hahaha relax, Fany! You look good! Right, Soo?” Said Taeyeon, who was leaned at the doorframe; behind her, was Sooyoung who was ending to munch and gulp her cookies as she adds with a smile:  
  
“Yeah! Jess will love for sure!”  
  
[Tiffany's look 1](http://29.media.tumblr.com/tumblr_lgdpt6DWam1qe5ygio1_500.jpg) (but without the hat)  
  
[Tiffany's look 2](http://www.phuketword.com/wp-content/uploads/2011/06/SNSD-All-About-GirlsGeneration-Paradise-in-Phuket-photoalbum-Tiffany-B-8-377x500.png)  
  
Tiffany looks to herself at the mirror for the last time and couldn’t help to chuckle coyly and whispers:  
  
“I hope so…” She blushed and then rushed to the door. After took a deep breath, she gently reached and turn the knob. Tiffany gasped slightly when a purple rose was right in front of her face; her eyes traveled at the hand holding the flower to the arm and then the face. She couldn’t help to lower her head slightly to contain her blush, yet she shot her head up to find Jesse smiling at her tenderly and still holding the flower, he was just like a little boy that discovered love for the first time. A coy smile crept in her lips as she gingerly grabbed it from his hand and smelled the delicate scent with her eyes closed. However, when she opened her eyes, she eye-smiled at an expectant Jesse; yet he smiled widely when he saw her genuine smile as she utters gently:  
  
“Thanks, Jessi… It’s beautiful.”  
  
Nonetheless, he shook his head and smoothly reaches her hand to intertwine his fingers with hers. So he finally whispers warmly:  
  
“Not beautiful as you… you really look adorable... like always.” He adds with blush spreading in his cheeks. She smiled at his cheesy remark, but couldn’t help to feel her heart melting with his honesty. She tilted her head to the side to take a better look of his outfit, he was just wearing a simple white button shirt with jeans, yet it could emphasize every trace of his well shaped body. Then, she adds with blushing cheeks:  
  
“You look very handsome too, Jessi.”  
  
He smiled coyly in return and nodded his head as he extended his arm to her which she gladly accepted with a smile in her face. Yet, she frowned confusedly when she saw him grabbing his duffel bag with his free hand; not containing herself, she poked his arm gently and asked as she pointed to the bag:  
  
“Hmmm… Jesse… why did you brought your bag?” Then, he chuckles at her curious eyes and poked her nose playfully. He keep walking as he dragged a curious Tiffany along, it was when he simply utters to ease her curiosity:  
  
“You will see soon. I promise.”  
  
With that, they parted to their destination…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The curiosity was taking the best of Tiffany, ever since her dorm, Jesse didn’t utter a single word; he just smiled… aish that smile… Tiffany would fell for that smile again if she wasn’t so curious and annoyed… yet, the other problem it’s that today they were taking a different route, she doesn’t have any idea where they were going, the only thing she saw was the green of the trees…Not holding herself anymore, she started slowly as she tugged Jesse’s arm and whined cutely:  
  
“Jesse…where are we going? You didn’t tell me yet…” Suddenly he stopped and she stopped as well to see what he was staring. Suddenly, she became agape with the sight of Jeju’s beach… the place was amazing, no… wonderful to be exact. Then, he sighs in content as he adds proudly:  
  
“We are finally here.”  
  
[The Beach](http://d30mmglg94tqnw.cloudfront.net/wp-content/plugins/magic-gallery/uploads/22/012.jpg)  
  
Tiffany was dumbfounded with the beach’s beauty; the place was really wonderful and the best part… this whole beach just for them. She released herself from his arm as she was walking in the white sand and staring the breathtaking view before her. Jesse watched her silently, yet smiling to see her reaction; for sure he knows how to find the best place for their privacy. Then, she finally turns around and beamed at him as she asks slowly:  
  
“Jess… how did you… how did you found this place?!”  
  
He simply shrugs his shoulders and grinned as he places his bag in the sand:  
  
“This is the good part of have a dojo inside the woods, I know these woods like my palm… but the true reason I brought you here it’s… since I can’t take you into a proper date ‘coz we are in an island… I wanted to be able to bring a date to you at least…”  
  
He said as he flushed immediately with her warm stare and agape expression. So he takes the stuffs inside his bag as he removed a blanket and placed above the sand. He organized the meals and motioned to Tiffany to sit as he scratches his cheeks coyly and looked down in nervousness. While he keeps his head lowered, he sensed Tiffany standing before him as she asked completely touched:  
  
“Did you make this by yourself? But I didn’t saw you preparing anything…”  
  
He shrugs his shoulders shyly and utters slowly as he nibbled his lower lip in anxiety:  
  
“Well… I managed to do it after we parted in the last night and today by the morning… but I still think that isn’t go---“  
  
He couldn’t end his sentence since out of sudden, Tiffany get down on her knees and wrapped her arms around his neck for a really tight hug. Even dumbfounded, he managed to blush and smile heartily when he heard the soft whisper in his right ear:  
  
“Thank you so much, Jessi… no one ever done something like this for me…I really appreciated.”  
  
He pulled from the hug slightly only find her eyes barely moisten, then he chuckles and held her cheeks very delicately as she was made by glass. Touching his forehead with hers, he whispers warmly:  
  
“And I hope to be the only one to do it… now, don’t be sad… give me that smile… come on, smile for me.” But before she could smile, Tiffany nibbled her lips shyly and slowly leaned to plant a very caring kiss in his lips. He widened his eyes in surprise, but before he could close them to enjoy the feeling of her soft lips pressed against his, she pulled from him and showed her most bright smile with her eyes shining in true happiness. He felt his blood rushing inside his veins with such breathing taking view as it was her face so close of his. Tiffany chuckles at his blank, yet dreamy expression and grabs a sandwich and motioned cutely as she opens her mouth:  
  
“Now, say ahhhh~~~” More than happy, he complied as she placed a piece of the meal inside his mouth. They keep repeating the endearing gestures as they feed each other and enjoy the mood around them with the beautiful landscape of the beach. Nonetheless, the couple was so into each other laughing, playing and cuddling that the time flied around them, yet they weren’t able to realize that the sky turned into a grey tone with dark clouds forming above them. They only snapped from their world when they heard a loud thunder, followed by the rain starting to fall above them. They quickly grabbed their belongings and stuffed inside Jesse’s bag as the latter grabs Tiffany’s hand to find some shelter. As soon he caught a sight of a small wood shelter, he yells:  
  
“Let’s go there, Tiffany!” She nodded as they rushed to the shelter.  
  
As soon they entered in the open and abandoned shelter, the rain poured even more. So Jesse places his hand on his hips and sighs as he admits into a sad tone:  
  
“Looks like we gonna have to wait…” Then, he grabbed the blanket again and placed in the wooden floor as he sits and placed his arms atop his knees. Tiffany had to smile when she saw him pouting and mumbling sulkily:  
  
“Great… just great… my first date with the girl of my dreams… it’s messed up…aishhh…”  
  
She chuckles at his child behavior and face palmed herself due his overloaded cute expression while he stared the heavy rain:  
  
“Just let it rain, Jessi…”  
  
Then, she positioned at his right side and asks kindly as she points to a spot close to him:  
  
“Can I sit here?” He dropped his guard when their eyes met, so he dumbly nodded head as she complied. Then, she slowly kneeled and found her way between his legs as she placed her head in his shoulder. He halted his breathing at the sudden contact, but eased himself as he brushed her hair gently and letting his heart double the beatings. They remains in silent, yet he frowned a little when he felt her body shivering slightly, so he rubbed her arm affectionately and asked softly:  
  
“Are you cold?” She pulled from him and shook her head trying to not worry him. She smiled weakly and whispers:  
  
“Don’t worry, Jesse. I’m fine…” He frowned and nibbled his lip in concern; so he quickly reached his bag and grabbed his jacket as he placed around her and rubbed gently:  
  
“Feeling warm now?” She couldn’t help to smile as she flushed with the worry in his voice and his face so close of hers. Nodding her head in agreement, she cuddled inside his warm arms again and placed her face in the crook of his neck. He caressed her arm gently as she finally speaks slowly:  
  
“Jessi…?”  
  
“Hmm?” He hummed softly in response as she pulled herself from his arms and stares at him deeply:  
  
“I realized that… you still didn’t tell me about your past…and the reason why did you enter in the Duel.” He creased his eyebrows in surprise and to be honest, he didn’t have this conversation with anyone beyond his master. Yet, his story didn’t hold a happy beginning, so he asks carefully as he held her hand fondly:  
  
“Are you sure you wanna know? My story isn’t very happy…” Tiffany quickly shook her head and looks at him deeply:  
  
“I don’t care, Jess… I wanna know more about you… and… tell you that I’m here to share any moment with you… bad or good ones…” He felt his heart fluttering with her words as he suddenly grabs her hand and placed a lovingly kiss in her fingertips. She blushed at his action, yet she turned her body completely to him as she gave her full attention. He sighs deeply and started as he stares at her deeply:  
  
“My father died when I was a baby…My mother told me that he lost his life trying to save us… After that… me and my mother managed to live normally trough five years, but…” She frowned sadly and squeezes his hand when she realized that his tone was a little sad as he continues:  
  
“We passed our lives running from my father’s killer… Dorian Han…” His jaw tensed as he remembers the name with rage and speaks in pain:  
  
“My mom told me that they used to be friends when they were younger, yet… Han was very envious about my father’s power and also, because my dad used his power only for the good…”  
  
“One day, when Han finally revealed his true identity… my father tried to stop him to let my mom escape with me… after that I never heard about my dad anymore…”  
  
“Jesse…” Tiffany gulped as she was trying to hold her tears, but his story was very sad. Yet, she only could hold his hand and let him finish as the latter took a deep breath to speak with his eyes slightly moisten:  
  
“After five years, we had to move constantly or Han’s thugs would find us… Then, one day while we were living in Seoul…I remember to be sleeping with my mom when we heard noises… like if someone was invading our house… My mom managed to escape with me through the woods… but they were fast… suddenly I saw my mom falling because she hurt her leg and couldn’t make it anymore… so she gave this medallion and told me to find her master to take care of me and told me that she loved me very much… I didn’t want to leave her… but with the loud footsteps, she pushed me to the forest and told me to run and don’t look back… I looked at her for the last time as I started to run aimlessly in the woods… but my heart stopped when I heard an evil laugh followed by a loud bang… that moment, I cried hard and my knees were numb when everything faded away as I finally fainted…”  
  
That time, Tiffany couldn’t hold anymore as her tears fell and washed her face. His story was heartbreaking; her heart ached more at the sight of a single tear falling by his eyes. However, he took a deep breath and gulped as he sniffed slightly:  
  
“After I wake up, I was inside of a Dojo and an old man was taking care of me. I asked who was he and he just said that he would be my master and family, I own him a lot…From that moment on, I trained hard every day to be able to protect myself and the ones I love… my master told me that I would find the answers that I need in this tournament… that’s why I presume that Han must be around here…I just need to find him and make him pay…”  
  
Jesse ends his sentence as he balled his fist tightly with anger shinning in his eyes. Yet, he felt everything diminish when he realized that Tiffany was caressing his knuckles gently and looking at him with sad eyes. Then, she whispered silently as she holds his hands:  
  
“Jesse…remember, when it comes time, please… don’t let the rage take over you… you are not a murderer like him… I’m afraid that something bad could happen to you… please, promise me that you will be careful…”  
  
Suddenly he felt his heart more lighter with her melting eyes, so not wanting to worry her, he grab her hands gently and look inside her eyes:  
  
“I can’t promise, Fany... but I’ll try my best…” The air between them eased a little, so it was when he wrapped his arms around her and placed his chin in her shoulder and asks gently:  
  
“Now… enough about me… tell me your story.” Tiffany blushed at his touch and stammered slightly in nervous as she explains:  
  
“I…I don’t have anything important to tell, Jessi…” He shook his head and smirked a little:  
  
“Everything about you it’s important, Tiffany… Everything.” She melted when she stared at his hazel and innocent eyes; then, she took a deep breath and starts as she was facing him:  
  
“Ok…remember when I told you that I lost my parents when I was ten?” Jesse slowly nodded as he squeezed her hand in a sign that she could continue. Tiffany sighs and stared the rain as she speaks:  
  
“After they passed away…I started to live in Seoul with my mother’s mom, my grandma. Yet, when I reached 14, my grandma became very ill and … I lost her too…” He frowned sadly as Tiffany sniffed slightly and wiped the tears forming in her eyes. Jesse gingerly wiped her tears as well and he whispers sincerely:  
  
“Oh Tiffany… I’m so sorry…” Tiffany smiled weakly and shook her head as she continues:  
  
“That’s fine, Jessi. It wasn’t your fault anyway…But there is someone who never left me and took a good care of me all this time…” Jesse creased his eyebrows in curiosity as Tiffany speaks:  
  
“Well, my father’s dad, my grandpa always took care of me since I was baby. He was the one who taught me about the elemental skills and everything. We always had this special connection…”  
  
“So you started to live with your grandpa?” Jesse asked softly; Tiffany shook her head again and answers:  
  
“He didn’t let me…He always told me that I should study to be someone independent to be able to take care of myself when he wasn’t there anymore… \*chuckles\* Then, I told him that my dream was to be an truly elemental fighter just like him…he disagreed at first since he didn’t wanted to see me hurting myself… but after he saw that I wasn’t going to give up, he sent me to Seoul Fighter’s Academy… it was there where I met Taeyeon and Sooyoung. And since then we are always taking care of each other…” Jesse nodded his head in agreement and asks:  
  
“I believe that you finally reached your goal, right?” Tiffany’s smile dropped slowly as she stares the rain again:  
  
“That was the main reason at first, but not anymore…half year ago, I discovered that my grandpa has a heart problem and needs to do a treatment. Since it very expensive, the only way to pay for the fees, it’s wining this tournament to get the prize…”  
  
Jesse was agape, he wouldn’t ever imagine it that Tiffany had some many problems, but she was always wearing a smile in her face. For sure, she holds a heart made by gold. That minute, he swears that he would do anything to help her and her grandpa whoever he was… Then, trying to comfort her, he caringly brushed a strand of hair behind her ear as he whispers gently:  
  
“This is very noble of you, Tiffany. You will win for sure, you deserve it. I have faith on you.”  
  
She smiled warmly at him as she cuddle in the crook of his neck while a weight of her shoulders were removed. She never told about this story for anyone beyond Tae and Soo, and then they stood in silence just enjoying the other’s presence. They watched the rain for some moments, lost in their thoughts…it was when Jesse reminded that a question keep bugging him since they confessed to each other. Suddenly, he strokes her arm gently as he asks carefully:  
  
“Tiffany… can I ask you something?” She replied still with her head in the crook of his neck:  
  
“Sure, Jesse.” He gulped and opens his mouth hesitantly as he begins:  
  
“Why did you… have a relationship with Taecyeon? … I’m sorry, but I can’t understand how a lady like you could date with a jerk like him…”  
  
Tiffany slowly pulled herself from him and stared at him deeply. Then, she looked down and nibbled her lips hesitantly:  
  
“I met him when I was in the Academy… at first he was such a gentleman to me and he was there when I still didn’t knew Taeyeon and Sooyoung. One thing leads to other and when I realized… we already were dating…” Jesse frowned and asked carefully as he held her hand gingerly:  
  
“But did you never have suspicions of him?” Tiffany took a deep breath and her mouth moved to downwards as she explains:  
  
“That time I was very naïve at love subjects… I thought that he really loved me and grab this thought tightly… but in the end… I was so afraid that no one wanted me… and love me that I gave up to find someone else…”  
  
“But…” She stared at him slightly teary as she continues with her voice filled with anxiety:  
  
“What do you mean… as in a lady like me… I’m not different from the others girls, Jessi…”  
  
She sniffed weakly as one tear fell by her eyes. She turned to her side as Jesse would think that she was silly to think in this way, but she couldn’t help it… Yet, she felt her heart thump hard in her chest as Jesse suddenly turn her around to face him while with one hand he turn her face to him and his free arm rested between her waist and hip. Her mouth was slightly open as he held her chin so endearingly and his eyes shone with deep love; she couldn’t even blink with his face so close of hers. So he whispers hotly:  
  
“No, Tiffany… you really are different…because I wouldn’t fall in love anyone else for sure… if it wasn’t you… no one could touch me so deeply as you do…you are perfect just the way you are…”  
  
However, he took her hand gently and placed right in his heart as he confessed and stared at her lovingly:  
  
“As long this heart keeps beating… I will be there to take care of you, to protect you and to be your shelter whenever you need me…As long I live…you don’t have to feel lonely anymore… I’m here to love you solely, Tiffany... it doesn’t matter what happens…This is my promise.”  
  
Tiffany felt hot tears flowing by her eyes as she was deeply overwhelmed with his confession. Never in her whole life, no one told her this before; Jesse reached her heart entirely like no one else could do. She felt her lips slightly tremble as her cheeks were burning due his touch. Holding a passionate stare, Jesse brushed her hair gently for the last time and then, he wrapped his arm around her waist, pulling her gently to him as his other hand held her face lovingly. Tiffany closes her eyelids when she felt his hot lips touching her own; she shivered at the marvelous feeling…  
  
Inside his passionate embrace, Tiffany deepens the slow kiss. Their heads tilted to the side as they were into in their lovingly action. Gradually, their kiss grew stronger, passionate and intense; Jesse nibbled her lower lips thirstily as she moaned and melted in his arms. It could be heard the smacking sounds of their passionate kiss; it was when Jesse acted by his instincts as he brushed her lower lip gently with his tongue to get access for her inner mouth. Tiffany parted her lips immediately as they let their tongues stroke against each other into a burning motion. Her hand traveled to his neck and slide to his chest where his shirt was half open, she smiled internally when she felt his fast heartbeat and her hand rested in his skin.  
  
She felt so weak, yet so protected in his arms; her heart pounded hard against her ribs every time his hands caressed or hold her. Their kiss lasted some minutes at they became breathless due the consuming kiss; suddenly Jesse broke it very slowly as he took a deep breath and opened his eyes. He stared at her lovingly and pressed their foreheads together as he held her neck in the spot. When she opened her eyes, her chocolate orbs glimmered with the transparent love in her eyes as she found his caringly stare. She leaned in and plants a deep kiss in his lips as she whispers sincerely:  
  
“I love you, Jesse… I just… want to thank God… to have someone like you in my life…” He smiled warmly as he caressed her face and utters affectionately:  
  
“Every single word it’s the deepest true… I love you, Tiffany and I will do anything to protect you.”  
  
“You don’t have to… just promise that you won’t leave me anymore…” The corner of his lips twitched slightly to upwards as he leaned and closed his eyes to press his lips lovingly against hers:  
  
“Never.” With that, the rain finally died as the sun was shining again beneath the clouds. However, the couple didn’t care about their surroundings since they were deep in their kiss and they hugged each other so tenderly. The only thing that really matters it’s this… their moment… their love. Yet, they didn’t have any idea what the future beholds for them… dangers and evil beings are ahead to take them down… Will their love be strong enough to remain untouched until the end?  
  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 11**  
  
  
  
The rain ceased hours ago, yet the couple didn’t want to separate from each other already. They managed to stay together until the night or when Jesse already told to Tiffany that she should rest. Even opposing the idea, she gave in as he brought her back to her dorm, but not without give a chaste kiss in her lips and whispers a “I love you” to her dazzled expression. She answers with a lovingly kiss in his cheek and with that, they hug for the last time as they exchange some meaningful stares before say goodbye.   
  
As soon she entered in her dorm, she took light steps to the bathroom to refresh herself and walked to the couch in the living room afterwards. Yet, once she seated on the comfy surface, she couldn’t stop smiling as she stared the beautiful purple rose in her palm. She brought the flower close to her nose as she inhaled the perfumed scent again; then she caressed the petals very caringly as she stared the starry sky outside her window.   
  
“Can’t stop smiling, Fany-ah?”  
  
Tiffany quickly shot her head up in surprise when she saw her friends walking to her direction with teasing smiles in their faces. She quickly lowered her head and blushed at the comment; soon Sooyoung tapped her shoulder affectionately and blurts:  
  
“Chill out, Fany. We just want the details!” Tiffany chuckles at her friend hyper state as Taeyeon quickly slapped Sooyoung’s nape and blurts into her umma mode:  
  
“Honestly, I don’t wanna know! You better be a GOOD girl and behave yourself, Tiphany-shi!”  
  
She managed to smile weakly, but she held tight her dear flower and stared at the sky again. Sooyoung and Taeyeon realized their friend’s distant gaze and frowned worriedly when they saw her breathing heavily with an uneasy expression. They quickly looked to each other and nodded as each one of them found a way to Fany in the couch. Taeyeon rubbed Tiffany’s shoulder gently and asks:  
  
“Hey… Fany-ah … we were just kidding… is everything all right between you and Jeshe?”  
  
After sighs deeply, Tiffany turns her attention to her friends and uttered sadly with her voice down:  
  
“I wouldn’t ever imagine what everything Jesse passed through these years…he must have suffered a lot…I wish I could be there for him when he needed…”  
  
“Fany… there is something that you wanted to share with us?”  
  
After Sooyoung’s careful question, Tiffany nodded and decided that it was the best to share this secret with somebody else. Then, after telling her friends Jesse’s story, the girls sniffed weakly and felt a tug in their hearts before such a sad past. They tried to cheer Fany, but the latter keep thoughtful in this subject, yet in a moment of wisdom, Taeyeon grabs Tiffany’s hands carefully and whispers:  
  
“Fany… answer me something, but you have to be honest ok?” Tiffany merely nodded as she continues:  
  
“Do you really love Jesse? Are you sure that isn’t just an infatuation?” Tiffany quickly shook her head and frowned confusedly with Taeyeon’s question. Yet, before she could ask the meaning of this question, Taeyeon gave a meaningful look at her as she was waiting for the right answer. Then, understating the true reason behind Taeyeon’s words, Tiffany briefly closed and opened her eyes as she breathes deeply and answers sincerely:  
  
“I… I never felt such a strong feeling whenever I’m with him… He… He taught me so much… but the most important of all… it was the love he gave to me… Even knowing that both of us had such a painful past… at least… and I wanted to be the one who he can trust, the one to be there for him and return everything he already done for me… to protect this love… our love.”  
  
Taeyeon and Sooyoung smiled warmly at Tiffany’s meaningful answer. They were really happy to know that their dear friend wasn’t confused about a relationship anymore since they knew Tiffany’s difficult to feel secure beyond them. Now, someone else would take care and love Tiffany just they did. After her remark, Taeyeon tapped Tiffany’s head gently and adds:  
  
“That’s right, Fany-ah. Always remember that.” So Sooyoung adds wisely as she held Tiffany by her shoulders:  
  
“And whenever it comes the time, don’t give up on Jesse! Doesn’t matter what happens, you have him and us too!”  
  
Tiffany couldn’t help to smile with her eyes teary as she pulled her friends for a warm hug and whispered:  
  
“Thank you, guys… I love you two so much!”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Mr. D was stomping his foot while walking heavily in the long aisle localized at his Mansion’s undergrounds. Finally reaching a huge and strong metal door guarded by two of his thugs in tux, he barked angrily:  
  
“OUT OF MY WAY!”  
  
The strong thugs gulped in fear and quickly stepped away from their boss’s way. Mr D. placed himself in front of a computer right at the side of the door and pressed the buttons hastily as he spoke loudly:  
  
“OPEN IT!”  
  
“Access granted.”  
  
The robotic voice answers as the cell’s door opened automatically. He quickly entered and locked the door behind him. While he stepped on the huge cell, his eyes scanned his surroundings…the place it was almost a fancy and a very feminine room, yet even with the all elegance, still was a cell. However, as soon his eyes landed on his aim, a sly smile formed in his lips as he approached from the person. A middle age, yet a beautiful woman was seated close to her bed with her eyes focused into an object in her hand; it could be saw a teary path by her cheek as she was holding a small pic very caringly.   
  
Instantaneously, Mr. D was behind the woman and when he was ready to touch her, the latter asks into an ice tone still with her back facing him:  
  
“What are you doing here, Dorian? Don’t you torture me enough already?!”   
  
Mr. D or Dorian chuckles disdainfully at her cold tone as he walks a little to take a seat before her. She glares at him piercingly in anger as she suddenly averts her stare to her side. He laughs again at her reaction and shook his head:  
  
“Tsk tsk tsk an angry frown doesn’t suits in your beautiful face… still act like though, Jane? …”  
  
She tensed her jaw and breathed heavily as she didn’t utter a single word and quickly hides her picture inside her dress. Then, he proceeds as he crossed his arms cockily and blurts:  
  
“What happened? Did the cat get your tongue? \*Sly chuckles\* you know, everything would be easier if you had cooperate with me and left Jin in the first place… I was very merciful to keep you alive…”  
  
She shot a hateful glare against him again as she snapped in anger and smashed the table:  
  
“You are insane! What do you want from me anymore?! Don’t you already took everything that I loved away from me?! Stop with this damn game and just let me die in peace!”  
  
He shook his head again and tried to reach her shackled hands which she pulled right away hastily. He laughs slyly and begins into a wily tone as she keeps glaring him with full anger:  
  
“Just when I come in peace… you keep treating me like a rabid dog… I have a heart too, you know.”  
  
“Yes, a very dark and cold one…Tell what you want already!” He smiled cockily at her subtle remarks and leaned to the backwards with his arms crossed again:  
  
“\*Chuckles\* Nothing, my dear. I’m just passing by to give you some excellent news… something that you would love to know…” She narrowed her eyes suspiciously at him, but she quickly looked away feeling completely disgusted:  
  
“I don’t want nothing coming from you.” He couldn’t help to laugh saucily again as he nodded his head with his eyebrows raised:  
  
“But I think you would DIE for this news, trust me.” Suddenly, Mr. D removed an envelope from his long black overcoat and placed atop the table as he pushed into Jane’s direction. She raised her eyebrow doubtfully as he motioned her to open the envelope and demanded:  
  
“Read it”  
  
However, she hesitantly grabbed the envelope and opened; immediately, she creased her eyebrows in confusion as she realized that some files with uncountable names. After that, she reached some pictures taken by the vigilances cameras scattered all over the island. The pictures showed the fighter’s profiles, fight’s pictures or ordinary ones. Yet, something in those pictures caught her attention… practically in all photos; there is one young man that always was present. She squeezed her eyes at the man, but she couldn’t decipher who really was, yet she had a strong feeling in her heart that she knew this person.  
  
Nonetheless, her mind was confused, so she shook her head slowly and placed the files atop the table again and asks doubtfully to Mr. D:  
  
“What it’s the meaning of this? I don’t understand why did you are showing me those photos.” Suddenly he laughs deviously and grabs one photo in particular as he adds cockily:  
  
“Tsk tsk tsk What a shame, Jane… I was expecting more from you… Well, since you couldn’t realize it, I will give you some hand. Take a good look on this boy’s neck… are you seeing something familiar?”  
  
Jane narrowed her eyes to take a better view of the picture; when her eyes landed on the spot in the young man’s neck, instantaneously everything rushed to her mind, like her last memories with him and it was undeniable that the young man in the picture… it really was her dear son. She widened her eyes in shock and gasped deeply as she couldn’t believe who was in those pictures… She raised her widened eyes to Mr. D who was smiling maliciously at her as he adds into a disgusting tone:  
  
“Jane… let me present you… your son… the little Jesse…”  
  
“!!!”  
  
She gasped deeply once again as she placed her hands into her hanged mouth. Tears started to fall by her eyes as her hands were tremble while she held the picture. She sobbed continually as she caressed his face printed in the photo. Then, she whispers with her voice cracking a little:  
  
“Oh my God...Je-Jesse… you-you are alive… tha-thank God…”  
  
While she sighs in relief and feeling overwhelmed with the discovery, she was brought back to reality when she heard Mr. D venomous remark:  
  
“Yes, it was the same thing that I thought in the first place. Finally I was able to find the little Jesse after all these years… what a touching moment!”  
  
Jane realized the malign expression in Mr. D’s eyes and felt her heart stop at this moment. She could tell for sure that he was thinking into a evil plan; yet she couldn’t risk her dear son’s life as she quickly get down on her knees in front of Mr. D and begged desperately with tears washing her face:  
  
“Do-Dorian… ple-please… I never asked you anything… but I beg you! Please, spare my son’s life! You already have me, but please let him go! Do-don’t hurt him! Please!”  
  
He chuckled slyly and brushed her face slowly as she hissed a little in return. Then, he raised her head by her chin and speaks disdainfully:  
  
“My dear Jane… there is nothing that you can give me now… but wait. I was thinking that you would love meet your son again…”  
  
He quickly stood up as he wandered by the room and smiled evilly to the pictures as he adds:  
  
“Think with me… it’s a golden opportunity to see him again… Hmmm… I wonder how the little Jesse will react when he discovered that his loving mom was alive after all these years… hahahahhaha!”  
  
“Then, using you as bait, I will attract him to my lab and give to him this last opportunity to see his mom! He is so naïve that he didn’t even will realize that he is going straight to my trap…”  
  
Suddenly, he turn around to find Jane’s terrified face and he laughs deviously as he ends his sentence:  
  
“And finally I’ll be able to extract of him what I really wanted! Hahahahaha it’s a perfect plan! … Once it’s over… hahahhahahaha…”  
  
She widened her eyes in fear as Mr. D was laughing like a maniac after tell of his evil plan. When he was about to reach the door to leave, her heart burned in anger and hate for him. She felt her blood boiling and in a desperate act, she rushed to him and slammed the latter against the door as she yells madly to his face:  
  
“DON’T YOU DARE TOUCH IN MY SON, YOUR FREAKING B@ST@RD!!!”  
  
However, due her weak state and his strong as his evil aura, he easily removed her hands from him and hastily grabs her neck. He tightened the grip in her neck as he smiled deviously as she coughed for air desperately. Then, he suddenly looses the grip and whispered darkly against her face:  
  
“Always remember your place, Jane… I’ll continue my plan and there is nothing you can do about it.”  
  
He roughly dropped her on the floor as he laughs hysterically and finally left the room with a loud slam on the door. Jane keeps crying on her knees as she rubbed her neck to try easing her pain. Even breaking down in tears, she still has hope… she wouldn’t ever imagine it that she would have a chance to see her son ever again and felt a little relieved knowing that he was able to grow up safely and turn into a man.   
  
Nonetheless, she spotted the photo lying in the carpet and reached it. She watched the photo lovingly and caressed his face as she placed against her heart. Her tears fell by her face as she utters weakly with a sad smile:  
  
“You turned into a handsome man, Jesse… just like your father…”   
  
Staring to the ceiling, she closed her eyes and prayed silently as she poured her heart:  
  
“God… please, I beg you… don’t let him take my son again away from me… please… don’t let Dorian hurt him… please…”  
She keeps repeating her prayers as she sobbed deeply in true torment and sadness.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Tiffany was lost in her inner thoughts after a weird gut and bad feeling… she couldn’t help to feel more and more worried with Jesse. She sighs deeply while lie down at the blanket which Jess placed for her atop of the wooden floor on the familiar shelter. Opening her eyes very slowly, she finds a beautiful sunny sky above them, and then she breathes heavily and slowly adjusted herself into a sit position. Finally seated with her legs hanging at the shelter’s edge, she became mesmerized and with her mouth slightly open while she observed Jesse graceful moves…   
  
The latter was with his back facing her and with his eyes closed as he practiced his daily tai chi chuan for his concentration training. Yet, today he was even more endorsed into his practice, he knew that his next fight wouldn’t be easy and for sure, knowing who his opponent… was. He must have every single caution. Back to Tiffany, she was in trance as she watched every single move made by him; it was like the sea’s waves… graceful, calm, yet sharp. She couldn’t help to blush as she stared the traces of his muscular body, precisely at his strong back, shoulder-blades, neck and legs.  
  
With one thought, her heart pounded rapidly as she stared into his strong arms… arms that were her favorite shelter and to make her feel complete and safe. He was very attractive and gentle at the same time when he wasn’t even trying; she closed her eyes to recompose her composure, but she failed miserably when she realized a sudden presence right before her. She flickered her eyes open only to gawk with the gorgeous view a few millimeters of her face. The sun was shining behind him and the sweat was descending by his neck to his chest, something that couldn’t pass undetected trough Tiffany’s eyes, who was finding hard to breathe at this sight.  
  
Jesse stared at her worriedly with his hazel eyes as he makes his way between her hanged legs; she gasped slightly in surprise and quickly looks down to cover the lively blush in her face. It only get worse when she felt his callous palms pressing her knees affectionately; finally getting her attention, she raised her head hesitantly only to find his tender eyes staring her warmly. It was when he frowned in concern as he asks:  
  
“Fany-ah… what’s wrong? You are awfully quiet since I brought here. I know you are bothered with something…”  
  
Tiffany sighs deeply and shook her head as she utters almost nonchalantly:  
  
“I’m fine, Jessi… you don’t have to be worried…” Then, he raised his eyebrow doubtfully and utters with an amused tone:  
  
“Is that so? Hmmm so why did you were staring me for the last… 30 minutes?”  
  
Tiffany widened her eyes slightly and gasped as she realized that she was caught. Gulping loudly and lowering her head, she stutters a little with blush in her cheeks:  
  
“I - I’m sos-sorry, I was just thinking… that’s all…I didn’t mean to stalk you like this but…”  
  
A subtle grin crept in Jesse’s lips as he found the scene to cute to bear; a shy Fany always melts his heart. However, he raised her head gently with his hand in her chin and then, he whispers caringly to her face:  
  
“I don’t mind at all, Fany…to be honest… I like when your eyes are only for me…”   
  
They stared each other for some seconds, until Jesse sighs soundlessly and thumbed her chin gently. He looks deeply in her eyes with the most care and asks softly:  
  
“Now… tell me, Fany-ah. I don’t want to see you locking everything to yourself… please, let me help.”  
  
After breathing deeply, she averts her stare to the ground and utters sincerely:  
  
“Jessi… I…I have a bad feeling about your next fight… why don’t you say me who is your opponent already? I – I’m really worried…”   
  
She frowned sadly as she continues and proceed and hold his hand tightly:  
  
“It’s just that I don’t wanna see your hurt again… I couldn’t bear repeat that suffering again…”  
  
“Oh… Fany…” He whispers gently as he brushed her hair very fondly and turning her head to his face again. She stared at him with sad eyes, so melted by her puppy look; he closed his eyes and leaned to plant a lovingly kiss in her forehead. She closed her eyes to the fluttering feeling of have his soft lips pressed against her skin; a blush crept in their cheeks after he pulled back to speak caringly:  
  
“I understand how you feel… but I can’t give up now, not with you counting with me… I promise that I will tell you soon… besides, you can have completely sure that I will always come back to you in the end… always, my love.”  
  
Her heart started to pound erratically as she met his piercing, yet lovingly stare on her. Not holding herself anymore, she leaned as she wrapped her arms around him for a tight hug and closed her eyes as her head found a way to the crook of his neck. He blushed madly, but he quickly tried to warn her:  
  
“Fany-ah! I’m sweaty! You might get dirty…” It looks like his remark only made her burrow her head even more in his neck and tighten the hold around him as she whispers faintly:  
  
“I don’t care... just let me hold you…”   
  
His heart softened at her sincere answer and not so far of this moment, he wrapped his arms around her safely and rested his chin atop of her head. His hand caressed her back endearingly as he closed his eyes to give a chaste kiss in the crown of her head. She opened her eyes slightly and smiled at the signs of love which she was receiving from him; then, she closed her eyes again and nuzzled his neck affectionately as her hand rested in his chest where she felt the fast heartbeat. They stood like this, just in silence and enjoying the other’s presence inside a lovingly embrace.   
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
After Jesse took a reluctant Tiffany back to her dorm, he says his goodbye after plants a caringly kiss in her forehead as he walked to his own dorm. Then, he managed to take a shower as he was deep in his thoughts while the water ran by his body. Minutes passed and after the shower, he dressed himself and walked to his bed as he lied on the mattress. He took a deep breath and closed his eyes as Tiffany’s face came to his mind and he shot his eyes open again. He didn’t want to hide anything from her; he knew that once he told her who his opponent was… she would be deadly worried for sure…  
  
However, he couldn’t stop his anxious heartbeats for her; he remembered how fragile and sad it was her semblance earlier and just because of him. He nibbled his lip in remorse as he realized that he should had be more understating for her actions; not holding himself anymore, he quickly jumped from his bed and started to wander by his room to think a way to call Tiffany, but without awake anyone else. Yet, his train of thoughts was interrupted when he heard a faint knock in his door; he walked to the door slowly and mumbled confusedly:  
  
“Hmmm… who could it be at this time?”  
  
“!!!”  
  
His heart swayed in surprise when he found no one else than Tiffany standing before him:  
  
“Fa-Fany?!”  
  
She nibbled her lower lip coyly and whispered gently as some blush spread in her cheeks:  
  
“Jesse… I’m sorry for show up out of sudden… but I – I…” He tilted his head to his side, frowning worriedly, yet staring at her very tenderly as he felt his heart melting with her husky tone. She took a deep breath and finally speaks as she raised her head and stared at him sincerely:  
  
“Can I… Can I sleep… with you… tonight?”  
  
He gulped deeply at her request, yet he realized the innocence and purity of her simple petition. Unable to deny anything to his loved one, a subtle, yet warm smile crept in his lips as he motioned her to enter. Hereupon, neither one of them uttered a single word after Jesse closed the door and leaded her to his room. They stared to each other lovingly and clearly even when the moonlight was the only source of light in the room. Jesse reached her hand and seated on the bed as he pulled her along, yet very carefully. He raised the covers and let Tiffany made her way to him.  
  
Staring each other for the last time, he caressed her cheek caringly as she placed a gentle kiss in his lips and he cupped her face lovingly. It was brief, but both of them managed to blush immediately once they parted. With that, Tiffany smiled in relief as she placed her head in his chest and wrapped her arm around his waist. He caressed her arm with pure fondness and placed a deep kiss in her forehead, whispering:  
  
“Good night, Tiffany. Sweet dreams.” He heard a faint yawn as she burrows her head affectionately in his neck and whispers warmly:  
  
“Night, Jessi. Sweet dreams.”   
  
Even without utter those three magical words, this time their love was being spoken trough their actions and words weren’t necessary. Tiffany fell asleep while she heard Jess’s suave heartbeat, yet she managed to tighten the hold around him; to his side, he inhaled her delicate and irresistible perfume as his arms surrounded her with love and protection. That same night they were able to sleep and enjoy the other’s warm embrace on other’s arms.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
In the next morning, Tiffany accompanied Jesse to the locker room where he was preparing himself for his next battle. At the same morning, Jesse managed to speak the truth and told Tiffany who really was his adversary; just as he thought, she became awfully worried and afraid, that’s explains the fact that she didn’t left his side since they were awake.  
  
While helping him with his fighter’s white outfit, she did a tight knot on his band. If she wasn’t so worried, she would be dumbfounded and dazzled in how his white costume really sharpens his attracting body. Back to her senses, while they were staring each other lovingly and lost in their own world, they sensed a dark aura close to them… As soon they turned around, they found Taecyeon glaring at them furiously, it was visible the hateful stare that he was giving to Jesse.  
  
The latter answered in the same way as he tensed his jaw and wrapped his arms around Tiffany in a protecting way. She gulped and hugged him back as she was really shocked to see such evil semblance in Taecyeon’s face, she could swear that she saw his eyes into a… red color? Suddenly the latter smiled sinisterly as he glared at Jesse for the last time and finally left the room.  
  
Jesse couldn’t help to feel bothered with that odd stare; Taecyeon’s eyes were different for sure, not just because the color, but something really evil was behind it and he really looks different, like if he was with no soul… it was really odd, Jesse thinks. Yet, back to the reality, he snapped when he heard the booming voice of the host telling that the fighters should step up on the arena.  
  
He took a deep breath and lowered his head to find Tiffany staring him fully in concern. Her eyes were so innocent and melting that he couldn’t leave before assure that everything would be fine… he hopes so. Then, reaching her hands and thumbing caringly, he cups her face afterwards. Due her melting gaze, he closed his eyes and pressed his lips against her forehead lovingly as he whispers:  
  
“I’ll come back for you, Fany. Don’t worry anymore.”  
  
She nodded reluctantly as she lowered her head and thrown herself in his arms for a tight hug. He sighs and kissed the crown of her head as she burrows her head in his chest. Thanks to the host’s second call, Jesse knew that he should go; pulling off the hug, he thumbed her cheeks endearingly for the last time as he finally turn around to leave.   
  
However, he was abruptly pulled back when familiar hands turned him around and cupped his face as a pair of plump lips crashed against his. He barely could describe the moment, everything happened so fast, yet he still had time to return the chaste kiss. Tiffany kissed him so thirstily, yet so caringly that he felt his face burning with her action as he returned in the same intensity. Suddenly, she pulled from the kiss and whispered breathlessly with her eyes closed as her forehead touches his:  
  
“You better come back in one piece.” He nodded assuring and felt a new strength burning in his heart; Tiffany’s kisses were an excellent boost for sure. He kissed her cheek gently and quickly turns around to speed off to the arena. She stared him disappear in the corridor, after he still turned around to smile at her warmly which she returned with tender stare and punched the air as she mouthed: “Fighting, Jessi!” With that, he nodded and turns the aisle, completely disappearing from her sight.  
  
Tiffany took a deep breath and prayed for his safety as she rushed to the bleachers to watch his fight. Meanwhile, as soon Jesse reached the arena; the audience waved and screamed his name. He watched the bleachers and sighs in relief when he saw Tiffany’s face. Then, stepping on the arena, the host motioned to the contestants approach to each other as he told the rules. He quickly cleared his throat and turned his attention to the audience as he yelled promptly:  
  
“Now prepare yourselves for the most awaited duel… I present you… our finalists of the first level…   
  
  
  
**JUNG JESSE VERSUS… OK TAECYEON!”**   
  
  
  
Jesse and Taecyeon curled their fists angrily as they glared each other furiously. Yet, the host couldn’t help to gulp at the heavy tension between the contestants, so he decided to begin the fight already as he punched the air and beamed:  
  
“And the Duel starts… NOW!”  
  
Taecyeon snorted and grinned deviously at Jesse as he snapped angrily:  
  
“I will enjoy finish you by myself this time, Jung!”  
  
Jesse cracked his knuckles and positioned himself to the attack. Then, he answers in his most deep and frightening cold voice, followed by an angry glare:  
  
“I just can’t wait then.”  
  
  
...  
  
**TBC**

**Chapter 12**

“I will finish you myself this time, Jung!”

Jesse cracked his knuckles and positioned himself to attack as he answered in his most deep and frightening cold voice and glare:

“I just can’t wait then.”

As soon as the host hurriedly left the arena, both fighters curled their hands into tight fists. They glared to each other fiercely with their teeth gritted. The audience was in silence as everyone was anxious to watch the most expected duel. Jesse and Taecyeon keep eyeing each other as they were studying each other's moves, then, out of sudden Taecyeon groaned in disdain as he charged against Jesse, who remains still as he kept his cold glare in his adversary. The spectators held their breath as a piercing shout cuts the air:

“YAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!”

Taecyeon angrily yells as he approached Jesse; now, just a few meters of the calm guy, Taecyeon jumped to get an impulse as he did a skillful fly kick directed to hit the Jung’s face. The audience gasped in shock when out of sudden, Jesse swiftly grabs his attacker’s foot in the air and hastily pulls him against the ground. Taecyeon’s face hit the floor flatly, yet, he snarled madly and roughly stood up as Jesse stared at him motionlessly; the latter gritted his teeth in anger with blood flowing by his nose as he dashed into the brown-haired guy to start another clash of punches or kicks…

Meanwhile, Jesse coldly read every single move of his opponent. He skillfully managed to dodge and defend the massive attack wave; yet, Jesse must admit that Taecyeon was fast and strong as well. But he couldn’t lose, not with Tiffany watching him; then, he decided that the best thing to do was to finish this fight soon. So, while he was receiving Taecyeon's countless blows, Jesse seizes Taecyeon’s right arm abruptly and rose on the air as he finally strikes the enemy with three punches on Taec’s right ribs.

The latter gasped in shock as he felt the air vanishing from his lungs. Taecyeon coughed some blood and seeing the red liquid in his palms, he becomes even more furious. His rage was making him lose his focus, which was the weak point that Jesse smartly observed and used against him. Taecyeon spits his blood on the ground and prepared himself to charge against Jesse once again as he yells angrily:  
  
“DAMN YOU, JUNG!”

However, Jesse was quicker as he dashed against Taecyeon and threw his legs in the air at the side of his enemy’s head. Taec felt his head squeezing as Jesse thrown his own body to the floor doing a back flip move; in results…Taecyeon spun in the air and hastily crash his face against the hard floor again. Jesse swiftly untangled from Taec as he stood before his wasted adversary. The audience goes wild as they saw how skilful Jesse was and started to wave at him. For unknown reasons, as much Tiffany wanted to be relieved with Jesse’s supposed victory… something was telling her that it wasn’t that easy… So she placed her palm into her restless heart and stared at Jesse in concern as she whispers:

*“Jess… please, be careful…”*

Meanwhile, just when everyone was thinking that Taecyeon loosed the fight… the reality was very different… Lying with his face against the hard ground and blood flowing of his injuries, Taecyeon groaned in anger as he was ashamed to be defeated so easily, well… it was when he heard an angry voice shouting at him thanks to his earphone:

“*Your stupid! I told you to use the boost since the beginning! But you have to act tough and get beat like hell by this b@st@rd!”*

Taecyeon gritted his teeth in anger, yet he whispers harshly:

“What I have to do then?!” It was when he heard a malicious laughter, followed by a serious tone:

*“You better listen to me this time, Taec! Or you will end like your G friend… take that damn syringe and apply the liquid in yourself… once you did… you will be strong than never… now… DO IT!”*

Taecyeon slowly removed a syringe with a red liquid of his pocket; hastily removing the cap, he stared the object doubtfully. He couldn’t bear with Jung’s victory, even more; knowing that he has his girl… Taecyeon gritted his teeth and roughly grabbed the syringe and finally it craved into his abdomen; at first, he suffered a convulsion as the liquid penetrated into his blood until it finds his heart and brain. He felt like his body was burning from inside out, the pain was unbearable; he suppressed a scream of agony as he bit his lips, but not containing himself anymore, he bursts out:

“AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!”

Jesse widened his eyes in shock when he saw Taecyeon convulsing and after sometime, he stopped abruptly as he fainted. When the host approached from the defeated fighter to start his counting, Jesse approached, staring at him suspiciously as well since he was feeling doubtful of Taecyeon’s loss. Before the host could go further, the audience gasp in shock when suddenly their heard a sinister laughter coming from Taecyeon. The latter was laughing so loud, but so scaring that everyone in their bleachers felt a huge shiver in their spines.

Jesse frowned as he realized that something definitely was wrong. But before he could continue, out of sudden, Taecyeon stood up in one single move which made everyone gasp as well. Jesse widened his eyes when he saw Taecyeon’s eyes in dark crimson as his semblance darkened completely and his injuries were totally healed. Besides, he looked stronger than ever with his veins completely exposed on his arms, chest and abdomen. Finally, Jesse could feel a very dark aura around his enemy… for sure something is wrong with this new transformed form…

Taecyeon smiled deviously at Jesse as he brushes his pants and cracked his neck. The latter closed his eyes, took a deep breath and snorted at Jesse's stupefied form. After he opened his eyes, Taecyeon stops his own laughing as he glared at Jesse maliciously:

“My turn now…”

Jesse widened his eyes when Taecyeon simply disappeared from his sight, but before he could position himself, he felt a painful blow right in his abdomen. The brown haired guy gasped in shock to see Taecyeon in front of him and punching his stomach flatly, the blow was so strong that Jesse momentarily lost his breath and coughed a huge amount of blood. When he was about to dodge of his adversary, Taecyeon hissed in disdain and chuckles darkly while he plants a rough kneeled blow right in Jesse’s face.

“!!!”

Tiffany gasped in shock and doubled the size of her eyes when she saw Jesse bleeding and being hurt by this monster… for sure Taecyeon was insane. Every punch or kick that Jesse received, Tiffany felt her heart aching badly since the only thing she could do… it was to watch his fight. Back to the arena, an injured Jesse managed to regain his speed to dodge Taecyeon’s infinite blows. Yet, he couldn’t deny that the fatigue and weakness were reaching his body and debilitating his agility. He tried to use a defensive posture since hitting Taecyeon was practically impossible; this new form could read his movement so easily that if Jesse fails in one simple second… a mistake could cost his life.

“What’s wrong, Jung? Is this too much for you?! Hahahahahaha!!!”

Taecyeon laughed loudly as Jesse tried to dodge and shun of his countless attacks; it was hard since Jess’s attacks weren’t of any help right now. Running by the arena, Jesse tried to get some time to think into a proper strategy, but his time was decreasing and his enemy strength… increasing shockingly. Suddenly, an idea crossed Jesse’s mind, if he deviated Taecyeon’s attention, he could hit his weak point and make him unconscious. But the problem is… to hit Taecyeon successfully, doing that would need a great amount of energy… the same energy that it was dissipating from his body.

Jesse tensed his jaw and stood still as he glared at Taecyeon fiercely. The latter snorted in disdain and asked cockily:

“What? Are you tired from running, chicken!? Wanna fight like a man?!”

“Bring it on, coward!” Jesse coldly added without taking Taecyeon out of his sight. The latter smiled deviously and shook his head as he added:

“If you wanna die soon… I can arrange that! You will regret your words, Jung! Here I come!!!”

Jesse quickly changed into his fight position as Taecyeon yells madly and runs into his direction. When Taecyeon was a few meters of him, Jesse was the one who vanished in the air and suddenly appeared in front of the transformed fighter. The latter was surprised, and then Jesse thinks:

*“It’s now or never!”*

With that, Jesse closed his fist tightly and gathered his whole energy to his punch, making a hard ice cover his arm completely. He roughly aims his blow to hit Taecyeon’s chest, but… shockingly; his enemy held his fist in the last second while he keeps an evil semblance with a devious smile. The latter gasped in shock since he his punch wasn’t able to hit his opponent… When Jesse was about to step back, Taecyeon snorted loudly and grabs Jesse’s hand fiercely as squeezed roughly Jess’s hands, almost breaking his bones. Jesse grunts in pains while he felt Taecyeon’s nails craving in his skin and hurting his hands deeply. Suddenly, the insane fighter grabs Jess’ hair harshly as he whispered angrily to his face:

“Thinking that you can beat me with this ridiculous blow? Now you will see what I can do! Take that, your miserable dog!”

*[Meanwhile at the cell]*

Jane Jung watched her son being injured badly on tv while tears fell by her eyes. Definitely Mr. D wanted her to watch this scene; it really was an immense torture, practically unbearable. How could a mother not suffer seeing her own son badly injured? She gasped in every single move as she whispers in despair and clasps her hands together:

“Jesse! Don’t give up! Pl-please don’t give up…”

---

Mr. D or Dorian watched the fight while seated on his elegant red chair in his on his ostentatious cabin in front the arena. He smiled wickedly in every moment Jesse received a blow and the latter’s blood was shed on the floor. Narsha, the one who was right at his side, couldn’t help to watch the scene in horror, not just because of Jesse, but because of Taecyeon’s new form… he was like an insane monster. She felt a tug in her heart to see Taecyeon acting this way, certainly the liquid which he tasted… transformed him into this terrifying beast…

[Back to the arena]

Taecyeon shoved multiples and massive attacks against Jesse’s face and torso, the latter felt dizzy with blood flowing by his mouth like a river. Taec laughed hysterically every time he watched Jesse’s blood spreading on the floor; each blow make Jesse weak at the point he barely could be unconscious. He still managed to scratch Jesse’s right abs, creating a small gash close to his hip. Finishing his strikes, Taecyeon throws Jesse hastily on the ground, completely wasted. He surrounded the defeated one and his eyes scanned Tiffany on the bleachers with horror semblance in her face and yelling in despair:

“JESSIIIII!!!!”

Scorning at her, Taec roughly grabbed Jesse by his hair as the latter was with his face against the floor and a small blood pool forming under his head. He makes Jesse opens his eyes to stare at a despaired Tiffany; with a black eye, Jesse weakly opened his left eye to find Tiffany crying and looking at him with a broken semblance, he wanted get up so badly, but he couldn’t, his energy was completely gone. It was when Taecyeon coldly watched and enjoyed the scene, whispers slyly to Jesse’s ear:

“Look at her… so beautiful and sexy…I don’t understand why she left me for a loser like you…”

Jesse grunted and whispered coldly in return, but faltered:

“You do-don’t deserve her…”

Taecyeon couldn’t help to laughs wickedly as he tightens the grip on Jesse’s hair making the latter hiss in result. Then, he continues with his dark voice, still staring at her madly:

“After I finish with you… I’ll enjoy playing with her again… hahahaha I’ll make her my--”

Jesse groaned in anger, he felt his blood boiling madly as he snapped and breathed heavily:

“Do-don’t you d-dare talk about h-her like that!”

It was when Taecyeon smiled evilly and whispered his fatal sentence to Jesse’s ear when he saw him incensed:

“Tsk Tsk Tsk can I tell you a secret? …remember that night were you two were attacked by G Dragon and his men? … Hahahahahaha I was the one who told him to finish you two off…”

“!!!”

“WHAT?!!!”

Jesse widened his eyes in shock as he felt an unbearable anger burning in his being. He gritted his teeth tightly and asked slowly, but deadly:

“Yo-you w-were the one who s-send that sick dog to… v-violate her?!” Taecyeon simply shrugs his shoulders and smiled maliciously to Tiffany as he whispers to Jesse:

“If I can’t have her… no one will… Even if I can be the one to do this by myself hahahahahaha!!!”

That’s it; Taecyeon assigned his own death sentence after his spoke his last words. Jesse felt his whole body shaking in deep fury and his heart thumping in adrenaline. Out of sudden, Taecyeon stood up and smiled slyly as he speaks:

“Such a pity that you won’t see it…time to say goodbye, Jung!”

He roughly raised his left leg and kicked Jesse’s face with too much strength. The entire audience gasped in shock when they saw a motionless Jesse lying on the ground. Taecyeon raised his arms and praised himself to the audience as the host quickly came to the arena and realized that Jesse wasn’t breathing. He frowned and pointed to Taecyeon who was being booed by the people:

“Ok Taecyeon, you are disqualified from the DUEL! You broke the rules! You can’t kill your opponent!”

Taecyeon snorted and crossed his arms in disdain as he laughs like a maniac. However, Tiffany’s heart stopped when she heard that sentence; her eyes started to burn with tears as she stared at Jesse lying on the arena. She shook her head in denial as she bursts in tears:

“JESSE!!! Nooooooooooo!!! You can’t give up now!!! Wake up!!! PLEASE!!!”

…

“Arghhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!”

Nonetheless, everyone stopped their booing and Taecyeon his laughing when they heard the piercing shout. Slowly Jesse started to get up from the ground as the audience clapped and goes wild once again; Taecyeon raised his brow thinking that Jesse should be dead right now… The host looked around and jumped in surprise to see Jesse standing up; he quickly runs out of the arena and announced that the fight would continue. Taecyeon felt his body shaking in fear when he felt a crushing and powerful cold aura surrounding Jesse’s body. The latter finally stood up completely and curled his hands into tight fists; his body was shaking incessantly and when he flashed his eyes open, Taecyeon gasped in shock… his eyes were scintillating blue once again and he went to a berserk…

Jesse’s veins pumped strongly as it were visible in his skin; suddenly his ears started to turn pointy and his muscles increased. He fiercely glared at his opponent and gritted his teeth angrily as he points to a frightened Taecyeon:

“Now you will pay, b@st@rd!!!”

Tiffany widened her eyes in shock to see Jesse with that same mad semblance; she knew that this means one thing… danger. Yet, she apprehensively watched the fight. Back to Taec, even being terrified by Jesse’s lethal tone, he clearly heard Mr. D yelling to his ear:

“DAMN IT! What are you waiting for?! Knock him down NOW!”

In an act of despair, he groaned and dashed against Jesse to punch him. When he was about to hit the latter, Jesse suddenly vanished in the air and appeared behind him as he deadly uttered:

“You won’t run away from me this time! Ahhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!”

In a blink of an eye, massive ice covered Jesse’s arms completely as he punched Taecyeon’s back. The latter fled to the other side of the arena due the hard blow; he coughed a great amount of blood as he panted heavily. He dashed against Jesse again and the latter swiftly grabs his arms to plant a lethal sequence of kicking starting on his abdomen, then chest and finally onto his face. Taecyeon spins in the air and roughly fell on the floor while holding his broken ribs and yelling in pain.

While wriggling in immense pain, Jesse walked to him and roughly pulled him from the floor as he held him by his neck making hang in the air. Staring at him piercingly, Jesse tightened the grip in Taecyeon’s neck as he enjoyed see his suffering and fighting to breathe for his life. Unable to stand watching anymore, Tiffany quickly jumped from the bleachers and runs to the arena. The staff blocked her passage, but close to Jesse, she calls for him desperately while fresh tears fell by her eyes:  
  
“Jesse! Stop!!! You are going to kill him!!!”

At her voice, Jesse rapidly averts his stare to her direction; he frowned when he saw her crying continually. She gasped to see his face so transformed, his eyes shone in anger, how could she convince him to not kill Taecyeon? It was when Jesse felt the rage rising again as he asks harshly:

“This freaking b@st@rd will get what he deserves after he tried to hurt you!”

She gasped in shock again at his words and while Jesse tightened his grip making Taecyeon cough desperately. Yet, she shook her head and curled her fists at the side of her body:

“I understand, he will pay for this actions, but… this is not you, Jesse! You are not evil! Don’t let this overtake you!!!”

“Arghhhhh!!!” Jesse felt the same sharp pain in his head as he tried to contain his anger… but it was so strong that it was crushing his being. He wanted to stop, but his hands were moving by itself; he couldn’t stand knowing that this psycho tried to hurt the one he most loved. He gritted his teeth in pain as with one hand he holds his head’s side; Tiffany stared at him worriedly with a tug in her heart. Not holding herself anymore, she yells with pure emotions:

“The Jesse that I know has a good heart! And your heart…only belongs to me! Remember that, Jesse! Please… don’t give up…Listen to me… I – I love you! I really do!”

Feeling the impact of this overwhelming feeling, Jesse started to feel his heart light and warm once again. Out of sudden, his headache dissipated as he slowly regains his conscious. Staring at Tiffany softly, his eyes changed to the hazel color gradually and he finally loosened his grip making Taecyeon fall onto the floor completely knocked out. He turned his body to her and they held a meaningful stare; when he about to step closer, his legs gave in as he kneeled on the floor while feeling a sharp pain in his bones. He hissed and closed his eyes to contain the pain, yet he must stand up to win this fight…

The host came and started the counting, he needed to get up or it would be a tie. Tiffany nodded her head and staring him gently as she yells:

“You can do it, Jessi! I’m waiting for you!”

“Ten, Nine, Eight, Seven, Six, Five…” The host worriedly continues his counting.

He opens his eyes to find her shining due the tears as she raised her arms like if she was waiting to hug him. Slowly, he found strength to get up as his heart was thumping like mad, just when the host was about to reach zero, Jesse stood up completely as everyone waved at him and yelled his name. The host smiled and grabs his arm to rise in the air while yelling:

“Here is our winner… JUNG JESSE!”

Jesse hissed slightly due his arm raised, yet the host apologized himself and left the arena quickly. Yet, before he could turn his attention to Tiffany, he saw an object shining on the floor. Narrowing his eyes, he realized that it was a syringe with a “D” golden emblem. At the same instant, he realized that it was the same emblem that he saw at the mysterious room at the D Mansion at the party night. Thinking deeply, he realized that he would have to investigate this and soon. However, when he turned around, he found Tiffany looking at him again; the latter was smiling in relief as her eyes curved into a crescent moon’s form. He smiled tiredly as he slowly walked out of the arena and climbing down the last steps. The staff keeps scolding her since she shouldn’t be there, then a staff member was ready to yell at her again, Jesse coldly intervenes:

“She is with me.” The staff quickly apologized and freezed at Jesse’s cold tone, soon he cleared the path for the winner. Now, without anyone blocking their way, Tiffany frowned sadly as more tears flew by her eyes. Not holding herself any longer, she runs to him and wrapped her arms around his waist and burrows her head in his neck into a tight hug. Even being in pain, this didn’t stop him to smile and strokes her hair gently with one hand, but soon he surrounds her with his arms of love. He closed his eyes as he felt a warm liquid in his skin; he caressed her back lovingly and whispers:

“Thank you for showing me the way, Fany. Only you can understand me.”

Forthwith, he brushed her hair smoothly as he gave a final squeeze around her and closed his eyes to inhale her delicate scent. He gave her a soft kiss on the crown of her head as he slowly pulled himself from the hug; she stared at him with her big and melting brown eyes and sniffed slightly. He frowned sadly seeing a tear path on her right cheek; wiping the tear with his thumb, he cupped her face affectionately and whispered warmly, still staring her eyes with love:

“I’m lost without you.”

Thereupon his sentence, she blushed as her heart pounded madly at his sincere words. She sniffed sadly while she used her sleeve to clean the blood coming from his injuries in his face. He caressed her cheeks with his thumb and both of them closed their eyes as he leaned to kiss her lips very fondly. His hand cupped her chin as he pressed his lips into her lower ones, eventually enveloping it with his hot lips and deepening the gentle kiss. Her left hand rested in his shoulder as the right one in his nape where she caressed slowly and kissed him with the most care aware of his wounds. Jesse could only involve her into his arms while his heart thumped furiously in his chest; he wasn’t able to distinguish the fast heartbeats since their hearts were firmly pressed against each other and both of them beating rapidly.

The moment was brief, but certainly meaningful for them. They pulled from the kiss only to stare each other with love overflowing by their eyes; Jesse caressed her face affectionately while she closed her eyes and placed her hand atop his. He leaned in and plants an endearing kiss in her forehead gaining a cheeky smile from his girlfriend. Then, she carefully wrapped her arm around his waist as she placed his left arm around her shoulder to help him walk. With her free hand, she guides his steps and becomes frenetically when he hissed a little:

“OMG! Are you ok, Jessi?” He chuckles weakly as he shook his head and keeps walking down the hall:

“Don’t worry. I’ll be fine… I guess so.”

She pouted sadly seeing him in pain, but was replaced by a coy smile as with her free hand, she brushed his bangs caringly:

“I’ll take care of you.”

He couldn’t help to blush and shyly ducked his head to hide his flushed face. Realizing his reaction, she couldn’t help but to chuckle and peck his cheek affectionately:

“Let’s go.”

Nodding in agreement, their stare met and a beautiful smile formed in their lips as they were lost in their own world. The couple keeps walking down the long aisle without care about their surroundings. Words couldn’t describe this crushing feeling in their hearts, everyday this feeling became stronger as it was shown clearly in their faces. But at the same time, it was so frightening… that they barely could or rather prefer to not think their life… without their other half… better more… without their true love.

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

After a refreshing shower, Jesse still had energy to dress himself; nonetheless, before he could wear his black t-shirt, he heard a gentle knock in his door:

“Jesse? Are you done yet? Do you need some help?”

He smiled at her concern as he answers honestly: “Don’t worry, Fany. I’ll come out. Just a sec!”

She replied an “Ok” in return as he felt her presence disappearing behind the door. Suddenly, he frowned when his eyes caught a nasty gash in his abdomen close to his hip. He closes his eyes and sighs heavily, as much he didn’t wanted to make Tiffany concern, the latter would be deadly worried for sure when she discover his injuries. Yet not just that one, he couldn’t help to realize that his knuckles were pretty scrapped with visible cuts in his hands, Jesse pondered his thoughts for a moment trying to remind where he wounded his hands. The answer was simple, when he tried to punch Taec’s altered form earlier, the latter was with slight long nails craving into his hand. He quickly shakes his head and took a deep breath; he slowly dressed his t-shirt and opens the door.

Not very far from him, he facepalmed himself mentally in awe when he saw Tiffany seated on the couch and staring at him caringly like a lost puppy. Instantaneously, she stood up from her seat and walked to his direction while holding a soft towel. One step closer to him, she tilted her head to the side and asked shyly with her big chocolate orbs:

“Ready to treat these wounds?”

He nibbled his lower lip apprehensively in return, but before he could answer, she already dragged him to the couch. After placing him carefully on the seat, she found a way right at his side and lowered her head shyly. He raised his brow confusedly when she finally speaks with visible blush on her cheeks:

“Jess… I need you to…hmmm… remove your sh-shirt… now...”

“Oh…” It was everything he could answer as he felt his face burning as well. Yet, seeing that she was having a hard time just like him, he decided that the best thing to do was obey her commands. Hesitantly, he pulled his shirt by his head and finally exposing his perfect and muscular physic. If he wasn’t that shy, he would realize that Tiffany’s jaw simply dropped in the moment when her eyes caught the sight of his shapely body. A tingly feeling spreads in her body as she stared him in some kind of trance; a couple seconds later, he carefully asked realizing that the girl before him wasn’t speaking:

“Huh… Fany… are you feeling well?”

Instantaneously, she averts her stare to cover her embarrassment. But it was a hard task to not appreciate his tantalizing body; after she took a deep breath, she was able to regain her conscious. So damping the towel into a bowl with warm water, she looked back to Jesse to find a spot to begin her nursing. However, her eyes found the gash in Jesse’s hip automatically; she frowned worriedly and looked at him with sad eyes. As he was able to read her mind, he nodded with an assuring tone while he stared at her gently:

“Don’t worry, Fany. It will heal soon.”

“But—“She tried to argue, but he shushed her delicately as his hand brushed her hair:

“Shhh…You won’t hurt me, I know it…”

Feeling calmer, she gave in after a heavy sigh and slowly rises the moisten towel. She held her breath as she carefully placed the fabric above his skin. At first, he hissed a little since it was an open wound, but he had to hold himself since he didn’t want to worry her. Yet, seeing his frown and teeth gritted, Tiffany felt a tug in her heart. Knowing that she should be fast, Tiffany start to clean his wounds as her hands gingerly touched his skin into a calming motion. The result was immediate, the feeling of having her warm hand stroking his skin was something relaxing, yet it was able to make a mess inside Jesse’s body.

His heart doubled the pace; shivers ran down his spine, his head couldn’t stop spinning and urges kicking out; who would know that Tiffany’s touch could it be able to make him feel so warm, but so unstable. Even staring at her intently while she diligently wrapped a bandage around his torso, he wasn’t able to realize that she already finished her job. Only when he felt a touch in his arm, he was brought back to the reality thanks to her angelic voice:

“Jess… it’s finished already.”

He dumbly snapped from his thoughts as he lowered his head to check her excellent job and… to hide his blush. A subtle smile formed in his lips when he saw how caring she was to treat him, since the only thing he felt was her warm touches and no pain. Slowly lifting his head, his eyes finds hers as he realized an apprehensive stare within her eyes, as if she was waiting for his approval. With his heart melting, he gave an honest smile at her as he couldn’t help to lean and kiss her cheek:

“It’s amazing, Fany. With an excellent nurse like you, I’ll be healed soon... I guess I should put my shirt now.”

“*Oh… right...”*

While he was busy wearing his t-shirt again, he wasn’t able to find the disappointed look in her face since it was such a pity to deprive the world of this gorgeous sight, especially to her eyes only. However, something got her attention in his hands, after she squeezed her eyes for a better view, she gasped to see his knuckle completely scrapped. When he was about to lower his arm, her hand stopped him; she stared at him worriedly and placed his hands above hers as she asked sadly with a frown:

“Why you didn’t show these ones earlier, Jessi? What happened?”

He clamped his mouth, but sighs deeply due her begging his eyes. Carefully removing his hands from her grip, he answers into a gentle tone:

“I-I’m fine, Fany. You don’t have to worry about it… it’s just some scratches…”

She nibbled her lip apprehensively, still not convicted with his words. Once again she stared at his injured hands and asked softly:

“Jesse… let me take care of this... Please?”

After some seconds, he gave in as he nodded and answered: “Right…” Her semblance turned into something more relieved; soon, she grabs some cotton and dampens it with alcohol. She took a deep breath since she knew that once the substance touched his wound it would burn painfully, still it was necessary. Hesitantly, she looked at him once again and he nodded his head assuring as with his free hand, he caressed her cheek caringly. Feeling more confident, she carefully brushed the cotton in his scraps…

At first, he flinched, hissed, but remains silent since he didn’t want make her even worried. She felt a tug in her heart every time she made the constant motion; finally finish her nursing; she carefully wrapped some bandages around his hands and massaged caringly with her warm hands. It was when he heard her soft tone as she knitted her brows:

“Is it still hurting you, Jesse?”

“Not anymore.” He added assuring with a subtle grin. Yet he noted how she was extremely quiet and with her head lowered. Frowning at her odd behavior, he carefully leaned and uses his hand to raise her head by her chin gently. Once their eyes met, he realized that she was tearing a little; then he asks caringly while his free hand combed her hair:

“Fany-ah… what’s wrong?” She shook her head and slowly whispered woefully with her head down:

“Did I already… tell you that I hate seeing you hurt?” He sighs deeply and acted quickly as he pulled her in for his loving embrace. Sitting on his lap and with her head rested in his right shoulder, she grasps his collar loosely as he utters assuring:

“Oh Fany…this happens when you are fighter…I must be ready for anything…” Seeing that her mood still was down and she wasn’t convicted, he breathed deeply as he inhaled her perfumed hair, nuzzling in the crown of her head. She couldn’t help but to blush at his signs of affections; her heart started to beat fast when he spoke softly again:

“But… at least I came back for you, right?”

She muttered softly a “Yes” as her arms wrapped around his neck into a possessive hug. His bandaged hand caressed her back affectionately as he felt her body relaxing slowly. While his arms were around her, his mind brings back the moment of he could recall her sincere words in the arena as in *“I love you… I really do.”* A smile crept in his lips as every time he would listen those words from her lips, his heart fluttered willingly. Out of sudden, he whispered lovingly to her as he tightened the hug:

“I love you too, Fany… so much.”

Yet, he frowned when he didn’t hear any reply. When he was about to repeat his sentence, he heard a soft snore coming from the angel in his arms. A smile formed into his lips as he suppressed a chuckle after realize that she already was sleeping. He couldn’t blame her since it already was night as she passed a good amount of time treating his wounds. Still with some strength, he whispers tenderly as he caressed her cheek:

“I think I must put you on the bed, right?”

He chuckled soundlessly while she keeps snoring and breathing in his neck. Then, he stood up carefully to not awake her as he caringly held her in his arms and brings her to his room. Placing her in his bed and covering her with his comfy blankets, he gets down on his knees as he watched how the moonlight illuminated his dark room. He became in awestruck as the moon’s glow shone over her milky skin body, it was a breathtaking view, he thinks. He couldn’t help to caress her cheek delicately with the back of his index finger as he admired her sleeping. She stirred slightly which made him stop momentarily, but he keeps going when she snored faintly again…

Deciding that the best was let her sleep comfortingly in his bed, he caressed her face fondly once again before kiss her forehead and whisper:

“Good night, love. Sweet dreams.”

He smiled and stood up quietly, just when he was about to make his way back to the other room, a soft hand tugs his own weakly. Rapidly turning around, his eyes softened when he saw her even with her eyes closed, but asking gently:

“Jess… stay with me… don’t go.”

His heart melted in this moment as he sighs and smiled. Giving in at her simple wish, he raised the covers and lied down carefully. Even with her eyes closed, she found a way to his body as she snuggled her face in his chest where her left hand rested as well. He wrapped his left arm around her as he pulled her even more to his embrace and caressed her back gently. He closed his eyes as he started to feel the sleepiness reaching his body. It was when he could listen, even faintly, the clear and soft remark:

“I love you too, Jesse.”

Opening his eyes weakly, he found a sleepy Tiffany with her heavy eyes looking at him, but smiling endearingly. He couldn’t help to smile and take her hand to intertwine their fingers together as he brought her hand to his lips and plants a tender kiss in her skin. Seconds later, they stared each other meaningfully as she finally closes the gap between them and plants a shy kiss on his lips. He closed his eyes and his hand traveled caressing her cheek gingerly and curling in her brown locks, catching an amount of hair possessively, but endearingly. She smiled at his action since it was clearly saying that she belongs to him and vice versa as she deepens the tender kiss.

However, feeling breathless, they pulled from the kiss slowly to stare each other with love as their forehead touched each other. A smile crept in their lips as Jesse suddenly pulled her again and kissed her very caringly while he cupped her cheek. She melted within his care and warm kisses; it was when he pulled from her slowly and stared at her deliriously. Both of them were flushed with the contact, but they loved the feeling of their hearts beating so loud in their chests. Suddenly, he smiled and pulled her back to his embrace as his arms wrapped around her protectively after covering their bodies with soft blankets. She smiled timidly as they cuddled in each other and let be lulled by his soft breathing and fast heartbeat.

With that, they finally closed their eyes and tighten the embrace around their selves as they drifted off to dreamland.

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

At the same time, into the fancy cell, Jane nearly shuddered in fear when she heard a loud bang in her door. When she looked around, she saw the culprit… Dorian was steaming madly as his eyes were filled with anger. As much she was happy to know that her son was out of danger and that someone was taking care of him, she was afraid of what this insane man could do to Jesse…it was when Mr. D yelled angrily to her while he snapped his finger accusingly:

“Your damn son won the fight!”

“You shouldn’t underestimate him, Dorian! Stop this madness now!”

He snorted and shook his head furiously:

“He will pay now…”

Once again, she felt her heart squeezing in fear as she tried to beg for her son’s life:

“Please, Dorian! He did nothing wrong! Just let him go!”

Dorian scoffed and slammed his fist in a table and breaking at the same instant. She quickly shut her mouth in fear as he warned dangerously:

“Now it’s time to put the Plan B in action… hmmm let’s see how Jesse Jung will react after knowing that his dear mother is alive… hahahhahahaha!!!”

He briefly stopped his laughing as he glared at Jane and ends his deadly sentence:

“If he wants to be noisy in my business… I’ll give this chance to him… hmmm lets how far he can go…”

She couldn’t take it anymore as she suddenly bursts while crying:

“Why are you doing this?! Didn't you already have enough?! He had nothing to do with our problems, Dorian!”

It was when a sinister smile formed in his lips as he walked to the door to leave. While he grabbed the knob as whispered deviously:

“You are wrong, Jane… he has everything to do with this… imagine what I can do with the power within his blood…”

“He will come to you…just wait for what I can do…”

“He will regret to come to this island!!!”

She gasped in horror due his devious laugh and whispered in tears: “*Oh no…”*

**TBC**

**Chapter 13**

*“Hahahaha!!!” An evil laugh filled the air and pierced painfully in Jess’s heart. Once again, he found himself lost in the dark woods where he saw his mother for the last time. Yet, this time it wasn’t his mom the one who was telling him to leave, but… Tiffany?! He widened his eyes in despair when he saw her running to him and yelling his name desperately:*

*“JESSE! RUN AWAY! SAVE YOURSELF!!!”*

*He couldn’t believe on his own eyes, for the second time, the one he loved was begging for him to leave. He saw tears flowing by her eyes as the evil laughter echoed in the air. But Jesse refused to leave, he shook his head recklessly as tears rolled by his cheek and he shouts:*

*“I am not going to lose anyone again! HOLD ON, TIFFANY!”*

*However, when he started to speed off to save her, a shadow approached behind her and grabbed her by her neck. Jesse widened his eyes and gasped in shock when he saw a strong and evil man seizing his beloved. Although he couldn’t see the man’s face properly, his eyes could catch a glimpse of his devious grin. Jesse tried to run and save Tiffany, but his legs were numb and he found himself weak even to stay on foot. The mysterious man laughed and scorned at him as he tightened the grip around Tiffany’s neck and mocked at them:*

*“Tsk tsk tsk hahahaha poor little Jesse… first, you lost your dear mother and now… you gonna lose your precious girl too HAHAHAHAHA!!!”*

*Jesse fell on his knees and tried to crawl at them, begging while his voice cracked as he saw Tiffany losing her strength and dying slowly:*

*“Ple-please… I beg you. Please don’t… don’t hurt her… take my life, but plea-please don’t hurt her…”*

*For a moment the man stared at Jesse, seconds later the same sinister grin crept in his lips as he tightened the grip even more:*

*“Hahahahahaha wrong answer!!!” Jesse widened his eyes in shock and yelled in despair:*

*“NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”*

\*GASP\*

Jesse gasped deeply and widened his eyes as he abruptly seated on his bed. His breathing was unstable and heavy, his hands were sweated and tremble while his heart was racing in adrenaline. Slowly, his body started to get normal as his eyes scanned his surroundings carefully to realize that still was in his room. Yet, when his brain started to recall what happened the last night, he gasped and widened his eyes when he missed one item very important:

“Oh my God! Tiffan--!”

When he was about to freak out, he realized that an arm was firmly wrapped in his waist; everything become calm as he saw her sleeping like an angel right at his side. He sighs deeply and close his eyes in relief, thanking God that he still have the chance to have her with him and to be the first thing he would saw when he was awake. However, even when his mind knew that she was safe and close to him, tears started to fill up his eyes as his heart was totally crushed only to remind of his nightmare.

Then, inspecting her serene face so carefully, he slowly lowered his head and strokes her left cheek very fondly. He smiled bitterly and relieved to see her peaceful safe so close of his; his hand caressed every single trace of her beautiful face. Her silky dark brown hair, her cute eyebrows, button nose and going to her smooth cheeks. While tears fell by his eyes, he sniffed faintly careful to not wake her up; yet, feeling his caring touches, she stirred a little as she tilted her head to the side.

He halted for a moment, but everything stopped when he saw her heavenly smile even with her eyes closed. She placed her hand atop of his which was in her cheek as she asked gently:

“Jess?”

It was like her voice triggered his hidden feelings as he gulped and sobbed soundlessly, still feeling the pain of his nightmare. Seeing that he wasn’t answering, a worried Tiffany open her eyes slowly one-by-one only to see Jesse seated at her side in the bed. The room was dark, but thanks to the moonlight, his tears were exposed. Now, it was her turn to feel worried when he saw the teary path in his left cheek; when she was about to lean and touch his cheek, he tried to lower his head and burrow his face into his hands to sob since he didn’t want her to see his weaken state and even more, when he was crying.

However not convinced, she knitted her eyebrows in confusion, feeling his sadness as she carefully removed his hand of his face slowly and raised his face gingerly. Their eyes met even in the dim place and out of sudden, she felt like a stab in her heart to see Jess’s bloodshot eyes. Unconsciously, her hand touched his face to wipe his tears as she caressed his face lovingly:

“Jesse? What happened? Please… tell me… please. Are you all right?!”

He nibbled his lips sadly as he shook his head since he didn’t want her to feel worried. Although he was making her even more concerned… seeing that he wasn’t going to talk soon, she tried to comfort him with the best way she could. Seating in front of him, she touched his forehead with hers as her hands wrapped around his neck where she caressed his nape neck very endearingly. Her warm chocolate eyes comforted his hazel ones; then, his tears started to slow down as he uttered with his low voice:

“I – I had a… nightmare.”

She didn’t spoke a word as in sign to let him continue, so he talked weakly as flashes of his nightmare come to his mind. He sniffed loudly and his voice cracked a little:

“I thought I – I had … lost you… you-you were gone and I – I couldn’t bear with the pain...”

This time, he raised his head to find her endearing stare and her semblance was so broken like his to see the one who they love suffering. Although Tiffany didn’t catch the true meaning of his words, she didn’t want to push him since she couldn’t bear with such a broken semblance. Then, thinking quickly, she cupped his cheeks as she stared deeply in his eyes and cooed gently:

“Oh Jess…it was just a bad dream… I’m not going anywhere and certainly… I won’t leave you, not after all we fight to our love last.”

His tears dried slowly as only with the sight of her serene eyes and her gentle voice, it was able to calm his apprehensive heart. Out of sudden, he leaned and placed his head on the crook of her neck as he wrapped his arms around her waist into a protect grip. She was surprised due his tight, yet careful grip; something was telling her that this nightmare wasn’t a common thing, but she promised to herself to be there for Jesse in everything he need…

Closing her eyes, she returned the warm hug as she wrapped her arms around his back where she caressed endearingly. She felt his tense body relax to her touches as his breathing was stable now; then, she took this chance to pull back a little and cup his chin gingerly to make him face her. Once their eyes met again, her heart melted at the sight… his eyes were so lost, but so innocent and warm that she couldn’t stay still without do anything. Brushing his light brown hair gently, she closed her eyes and leaned a little as she places a caringly kiss in his lips.

The kiss was short, but enough to make their heartbeats double the pace when they opened their eyes to look at each other lovingly. She smiled comfortingly as she plants another tender kiss in his lips making him blush a little. Then, once they parted, she lay down again in the bed and dragging him along. They were laid facing each other in Jess’s bed; Tiffany placed his arms carefully around her waist. Following by rest her hand in his chest as the another hand caressed his face while they stared at the other’s eyes filled with true love.

Jesse couldn’t help to lean and bring her to his body where he embraced her tenderly and kissed the top of her head. She smiled and blushed in return when she heard a gentle whisper in her ear:

“I love you, Tiffany.”

She sighs in content as she burrows her head in the crook of his neck where she placed a chaste kiss:

“I love you too, Jess… remember… I always will be here.”

Even feeling calmer with her answer, Jess caressed her back lovingly with his fingertips while he was thinking deeply after realize that she already was sleeping. Lost in his thoughts, he looked back at the person he most loved in this world and kissed her forehead tenderly. He finally made a decision as he stared the moon intently:

*“I’m sorry, Fany … but I have to discover where Han is and make him pay before he could do something to you… I can’t risk your life and let you get yourself hurt… you are too precious for me, my love…”*

He looked at Tiffany once again, but with warm eyes as tightened the hug around her, but carefully. His lips grazed against her bangs as he whispered before plant a caringly kiss in her forehead:

*“ At least… I need to do something special for you to make you remember me… Fany.”*

*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-*

By the morning, Tiffany stirred a little when the sunbeams touched her eyes. Fluttering her eyes open one-by-one, she rubbed one of them cutely and smiled to herself remembering how comfortable and warm she felt the earlier night. Jesse managed to hold her into his cozy embrace the whole night, never in her whole life she would have the amazing feeling of protection and safety as only Jesse could provide her… maybe this was one of the many things that love can do… no, certainly love could make much more wonders, she thinks.

Just when she moved her left arm to touch her beloved, she frowned confusedly when her palm only touched the silk sheets. Becoming more awake, she pouted sadly since she was alone in his bed; when she was about to get worried, she saw a note with her name and a beautiful handwriting. Smiling unconsciously, she reached the note in the nightstand and opened to read the content carefully:

*“Good morning, Fany ah. I’m really sorry for not be there and be the first thing you would see in the morning. But I am preparing something for you today, so please meet me on our special place on our training spot at noon. I’ll be waiting for you. With love, Jesse.”*

Her smile widened as she thumbed his name on the letter affectionately. Sighing in content and her heart thumping in her chest, she took the note and pressed again her chest, close to her reckless heart. Once again, she would need her friends help to advices and everything. Soon, she rushed to the bathroom and refreshed herself as she finally dashed to her friend’s room or her room as well actually. Once she stepped in the room, she was greeted by a storming and ajhuma voice:

“MISS HWANG MIYOUNG?! WHERE IS THE YOUNG LADY PASSED THE WHOLE NIGHT, HUH?!”

Tiffany rolled her eyes playfully and pulled her small friend to mess her hair teasingly as she adds into an aegyo voice:

“Wahhhh Tae-Tae umma! I was at Jesse’s room and you know that! I send you a message yesterday saying that I would take care of him, ya!”

Setting free of her strong grasp, Taeyeon narrowed her eyes suspiciously and asked into demanding voice:

“Hmm what do you mean in take care of Jesshe? You just took care of him OR You REALLY took care of him … and his bedroom… and alone?!”

Tiffany blushed immediately as her cheeks were plastered in a vivid pink color. When she was about to answer, another storming voice broke their conversation or rather… the interrogation:

“Whoa whoa whoa! My ‘unnie’ didn’t waste time! So tell me, Fany! Tell me, pleaseeee!!! I wanna know the details! He is rough or he is gentle? I bet he was a gentleman with you and ---!!! Hmmhmhhh!!!”

When Sooyoung to finish her sentence, Taeyeon quickly shut her mouth with her hand as she scolded:

“Ya! Choi Sooyoung! This is Tiphany private’s life! BUT---“ She stopped briefly and turned her attention to a flushed Tiffany as she narrowed her eyes again and asked earnestly:

“You didn’t make anything… RIGHT, FANY?!”

Suddenly Tiffany burrows her red face in her hands and yelled in embarrassment:  
  
“Oh my GOD! How can I have such pervert friends?! I just slept with him! And in the biblical meaning for God’s sake! Sleep on the same bed and nothing more! Aishhhhh!”

Suddenly Taeyeon and Sooyoung looked to each other with a surprised look, and then, they quickly pulled theirselves from each other grasp. Taeyeon couldn’t help to smile in relief as she wiped the imaginary sweat in her forehead and tapped Tiffany’s shoulder in content:

“There! You are a good girl, Fany-ah! I always believed on you! You are jjang!”

She adds with thumbs up and a wide smile in her face, to Tiffany’s side, the latter simply shook her head and mumbled in defeat:

“Now this midget pervert umma believes in me…”

“What did you said?!” Taeyeon asked harshly; Tiffany quickly laughs in nervousness as she pulled the ‘midget’ for a tight hug and speaks quickly:

“Ya, Tae-Tae! I was kidding! But you need be more trusting! And you don’t have to be worried about Jesse… He is different from any guy I ever met; he cares about me and respect me…”

She stopped briefly and smiled appeared on her face as she blushed a little while talked about him:

“He is really amazing… and I – I wouldn’t ever found someone like him in my whole life…”

She only stopped when she felt Sooyoung nudging her arm teasingly and smiling happily at her as she speaks into a warm tone:

“You really love him, right? I just can see in the way your eyes shine when you talk about him.”

Tiffany couldn’t help to smile even more and blush at the truth as she nodded shyly. Just then, Taeyeon placed her hand in her Tiffany’s free shoulder and warned affectionately:

“So don’t give up of this guy and fight for what you believe, Fany-ah!”

Tiffany smiled warmly at her friends and when she about to speak, one thought ran in her mind when she saw the clock in the wall “11:30”?! Omo! She widened her eyes and rushed to the bathroom, yelling hopelessly:

“OMG! I need help! Guys, please help me! I have a date with Jesse at noon! AND I DON’T KNOW WHAT I’M GOING TO WEAR?!”

Taeyeon and Sooyoung looked to each other and chuckled at the girl’s hopeless mode. But soon, the two friends started to help Tiffany with her outfits, but deep in their hearts, they were happy to see someone was making their friend feel happy and safe.

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

In her floral dress, Tiffany ran rapidly in the woods as her long and brown hair flopping side-by-side in her back while she was reaching Jesse. One tree to go and she would find him, then, when she stepped forward, she was agape with the stunning view. The sun was shining beautifully over the crystalline water coming from the waterfall. Yet, the truth it’s that Tiffany wasn’t agape only with the breathtaking view of the nature… but from the stunning view coming from Jesse’s shirtless soaked form.

The way the droplets of water were running by his wet hair and traveling by his body was making Tiffany shivers at the thought of touch his skin against her own. Her heart started to beat erratically when he turn around and flashed his bright and lovingly smile. She gulped deeply as if she was mesmerized by his stunning physic which was coming in her direction, his well-shaped eight-pack abs, his strong and muscular arms, and his perfect body. Tiffany had to use a great strength to hold her in the place… certainly… he was amazing in every single way without trying.

Now in front of her, he looked down to her warm chocolate eyes as he placed his hands in her shoulder, still smiling gently. She blushed right away and lowered her head in embarrassment since she was feeling guilty to check him out blatantly. Suddenly, she felt his hand clasping gingerly in her chin followed by a warm whisper in her ear:

“You look beautiful, Fany-ah.”

If it was able, she blushed even more, but decided to raise her head and met his lovingly hazel eyes. A smile formed in her lips as her hands brushed his soaked bang to the side and she gave a peck in his cheeks while saying:

“You are not bad either…”

He chuckles and this sound filled her ears wonderfully. Moments like this, they didn’t need words to describe their feelings; just the look in their eyes could tell how in love they were for each other. However, out of sudden, he tugged her hand affectionately as he leaded her to the lakeside:

“My surprise it’s after that waterfall. Why won’t we go there and check it out?”

She narrowed her eyes playfully at him since he was acting like a naïve kid who was trying to surprise the first love. But before she could answer, her eyes caught a glimpse from his earlier wound and she became slightly agape, since now there is only a faint scar in the place. Before she could ask, he pointed to the waterfall and spoke with a smile in his lips:

“We must go there. Here, this boat will take to the waterfall. I don’t want you get yourself wet and even more, a cold.”

Tiffany just has to smile at the guy’s concerned face in front of her and decided to drop the subject. Yet, seeing that he was completely soaked, she couldn’t help to ask while she raised her eyebrow:

“But… how did you made your way there, Jess?”

“Oh… I went there swimming… why?”

Suddenly a mischievously smile plastered in her lips as she speaks absent-mindedly:

“So if you went down there swimming… I will go as well!”

“Ti-Tiff--!!!”

Jess had to turn around quickly, completely flushed with his cheeks red in shyness when Tiffany pulled her dress into a swift move revealing her swimsuit, rather… her navy blue bikini. She learned that Jesse loved secret places and even more when he was close of the nature beauty, that’s why whenever she was with him, she would always be ready. He was with his eyes closed when soft hand rested in his shoulder making him turn around slowly, followed by a gentle and husky voice:

“Let’ go, Jesse. You can open your eyes now, trust me.”

Feeling a lump in his neck, Jesse carefully opened his eyes one by one only to refrain himself to not gawk at the girl with a goddess’s body. The way the sunlight reflected into her milky skin was something mesmerizing, but Jesse could only look at her face lovingly and getting lost into her deep stare. Suddenly, he blushed even more when she eye-smiled at him and held his hand as their feet touched the fresh water. A smile crept in his lips when he saw the excitement glint in her eyes; so he nodded with a smile to her and both of them dived to the waters into the waterfall’s direction.

While they were swimming, Jesse and Tiffany were holding their hands all the time and they would steal some glances from each other only to be assured that the other one was fine. Once they reached the beautiful cascade, Tiffany saw a small cavern trough the waterfall, it was when let go of her hand momentarily to reach the edge and climb up as he quickly turn around to hold her hand and pull her to the surface carefully. She smiled in appreciation as Jesse leaded her to one spot. Tiffany was surprised with the beauty of the place, even being a cavern, the place was surrounded with water and the sunbeams were illuminating the place.

Suddenly, Jesse stopped her and with a smile in his face, he asked gently:

“Tiffany… could you close your eyes for one second?”

Tiffany raised her eyebrow suspiciously, but smiled at his silliness as she closed her eyes, saying:

“Hmmm what are you planning, Jesse Jung?”

She heard him chuckling as he utters affectionately into a smooth tone while he took her hand and leaded a few steps closer to his ‘surprise’:

“Trust me. I think you will like it… well I hope so… There, you can open your eyes now.”

Complying at his gentle demand, Tiffany opened her eyes one by one slowly… when her sight catch the view in front of her, she gasped deeply and widened her eyes in surprise. Out of words, she placed a hand into her “O” shaped mouth as she walked slowly to his surprise. Actually, his present was something that she wouldn’t ever imagine… Jesse made an ice sculpture of Tiffany, completely perfect, but with angel’s wings on the back. Still agape, Tiffany carefully touched her ice replica, totally marvelous with Jesse amazing work. Suddenly his voice breaks her train of thoughts as he touched the replica’s arm carefully, saying into coy tone:

“I was working on this since the morning and I used a special kind of ice to not make this statue melt in any occasion. I really wanted to do something to make you remember me and to show you how much you mean for me… you are like an angel… my beautiful angel.”

Tiffany felt tears forming in her eyes as words were stuck in her throat. Still, she managed to speak, feeling completely touched and her heart beating fast in her chest:

“You-you really did this… for-or me?”

Jesse smiled lovingly, but frowned in concern when he saw tears rolling by her eyes. He quickly stepped closer and wiped her tears carefully with his thumb as he cooed worriedly:

“Oh… Fany. You didn’t like it? I’m so sorry, I wanted to do something really special to you, but I didn’t know what to do! So the only thing I could think it was this… If it wasn’t very good I can---!!!”

His blabbered was stopped abruptly when a pair of thirsty lips collided against his own into a stunning kiss. He widened his eyes, but his eyelids closed slowly as he wrapped his arms around her waist gently. Their heart were pounding madly as they deepened the passionate kiss; Tiffany couldn’t feel more grateful and loved when she saw this perfect present. That’s why in this kiss, she poured all the pure love that she felt for him… how could she not love him? He was everything she could ever ask, and now… her heart simply overflowed after his action.

He cupped her cheeks fondly as he pressed his lips against her lower and plump ones while he tilted her head to the side. She took his upper lip with her ones as leaned even more inside his arms and embraced him tight. The kiss was slow and passionate, but innocent with no tongues, only her hand cupping his back of his head to deepen the kiss.

Moments later, still in the other’s embrace, they pulled from theirselves managing to make a ‘plop’ sound as they touched their foreheads with the other. Jesse opened his eyes, but Tiffany remained with her eyes closed, but she whispers breathlessly with a gorgeous smile in her face:

“This was the best present that I ever had… thank you, Jess.”

Jesse blushed slightly as Tiffany finally opened her eyes and stared at him lovingly. Her hand keep caressing his wet hair and sending shivers to his spine. The corner of his lips twitched to upwards as he shook his head and clasped her hand to plant a gentle kiss:

“Nothing it’s too much for you, Fany. You deserve everything I can give.”

She didn’t resist to plant a coy kiss in his lips as she sighs in content while the silence surrounded them again. Then, Jesse pulled her by her waist as he seated on the ground and placed her between his legs while they watched the sun beams trough the waterfall. Jesse wrapped his arms around her waist possessively, but affectionately as Tiffany smirked in return and placed her hands on top of his. He pressed his shaped chest against her back as her attracting scent filled his nostrils. With one hand, he caressed her hair and dared to plant a caringly kiss in her neck. Both of them blushed madly, but neither one of them wanted to end this marvelous moment.

With his chin above her right shoulder, millions of thoughts crushed his mind as he stared at the water intently. He still was thinking deeply about his nightmare in the last night and that syringe with a D emblem was making him even more concerned. Certainly that Mr. D was suspicious, or else who would be the one, unless the own master of the Duel who would give a hand to Taecyeon win the fight. Jesse couldn’t wait anymore… he wouldn’t let Tiffany a verge of danger again to make his move.

So he finally made his mind, tonight, he will go at the D Mansion and investigate, and who knows? Maybe this it will be his chance to settle everything. Although he knows he is very skillful to be stealth and invisible thanks to his master’s training, he doesn’t have any idea about what will happen with him, but it’s now or never. He promised himself to be truthful with Tiffany doesn’t matter what happens, but this time, he knew that he couldn’t tell her the truth, he couldn’t afford put her like in risk. Then, trying to not make her feel worried, Jess whispered to her ear gently as he thumbed her right arm gently:

“Hey, Fany?”

She closed her eyes, smiled and hummed in content: “Hmmm?”

He nibbled his lower lip, but continued as he keeps caressing her arm and pressed his lips in her shoulder:

“Fany-ah… I don’t know if it’s the right time to say this, but… just to let you know that it doesn’t matter what happens from now on… I will always be here for you, to protect and loving you as I always will bring you in my heart… so, please… don’t forget me.”

Suddenly Tiffany turned around and frowned her eyebrows confusedly with the sudden mood change of Jesse. Once their eyes met, she nibbled her lower lip and raised her hand to touch his cheek endearingly. He lowered his head in guilty since he knew that this time as much he wanted, he hid the truth of her. Yet, she raised his face gently to look deeply in his eyes as she speaks caringly:

“Jesse…” She stopped briefly as a heavenly smiled plastered in her face:

“I wouldn’t ever forget you doesn’t matter how hard I try, because I don’t want to… you are in my heart… no… you held my heart… now and always…”

However, her face turned serious again as she asked with her hand in his chin:

“You are not thinking in do anything risky, right?”

Jesse gulped deeply at her inquisitive stare and looked back to her eyes, trying hard to not look suspicious. So he took a deep breath and enveloped her hands with his own as he sighs deeply and kissed her hand:

“No, Fany… I wouldn’t do anything to hurt or deceive you... I love you very much to let you go, understood?”

At his last sentence, Tiffany felt more relieved as she sighs in content after see his serious stare. Then, he smiled weakly and leaned to plant a soft kiss in her lips. She closed her eyes to feel the amazing feeling of his lips against her own into a lovingly motion. Seconds later, he pulled from her and kissed her nose gently as she finally speaks with a smile in her face:

“I love you Jesse… and don’t forget that, understood?”

He chuckles as she repeated his gesture while he answered with a “Yes” and they returned to their previous position. Still deep in his thoughts, Jesse tightened the grip around her slim waist and kissed her cheek while whisper sweet nothings to her ear. He smiled when she pecked his cheek and they stared the waterfall again. It was decided, Jesse will find out who are really this Mr. D and what he is planning to…

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

At night, Jesse took Tiffany back to her dorm since he had plans, yet his girlfriend was opposite the idea since she was more than touched and happy for all those things Jesse done for her. However, with a lot of work, as much Jesse would love sleep aside the girl he loves and rest her in his arms, he couldn’t afford let her alone and in danger while he would make his move to the D Mansion at dawn.

Nevertheless, in front of Tiffany’s dorm door, the latter managed to pull him for a passionate and stunning kiss before say their farewells. Like always, both of them would blush like mad as their hearts were beating erratically and ready to jump out of their chests. Then, after many rounds of lovingly kisses, Jesse pulled from her grasp to caress her left cheek and touch her forehead with his own. They smiled fondly to each other as Jesse closed his eyes and kissed her forehead as he whispered gently:

“How I love you…good night, Fany.”

She eye-smiled brightly at him and kissed his lips gingerly as she whispered the same thing:

“I love you too, Jess. Bye.”

He flashed a genuine smile since it doesn’t matter how many times they already uttered those words before, it would always have the same amazing feeling. Then, finally saying their goodbyes with an affectionately hug, they exchange some longing stares, but Jesse waited for Tiffany enter in her room as he turned to his own. Back to his dorm, he traced the whole plan about how he would invade the D Mansion without being noted.

~\*~

At 2:00 AM, Jesse was in front the D Mansion, carefully looking at his surroundings as he was behind tall trees. The place was like a fortress, with cameras, bodyguards and intruder’s alerts all over the mansion. Yet, Jesse had to shake his head because his master trained him hard to get in one place without be noted, must say, the basic ninja skills. However, when the bodyguards changed their shift, Jesse took this chance to go to the back of the house to follow them.

Seeing that the camera was directed to his spot, Jesse stealthy formed an ice ball in his palm and hastily thrown against the object and freezing at the same moment. The bodyguards heard some noise and quickly turn around, but only to be knockout with a double punch in the back of their heads. Jesse panted deeply since he wasn’t used to do those things, but he had to, he need find answers and what kind of experiment they are doing inside this mansion.

Then, grabbing the bodyguards unconscious bodies, Jesse put them behind the bushy tree. Now, he got his chance to get the cardkey and enter the mansion. Jesse grinned to himself since the backdoor placed him just when he was going to start his investigation. Being really fast, dodge and escape from the cameras wasn’t a big deal for him. Soon, while running into a long corridor with his light steps, he found the door he was suspicious at the party’s day.

He looked to both sides and seeing that the corridor was empty, he carefully took a glance at the door’s glass window. The room was dark as in the last time, but he still could see some lighten panels saying something like “Host 1” and there is go to many numbers. He creased his eyebrows in confusion, but this time he decided to enter in the room. The door was locked of course, then he quickly freezed the knob to unlock the door.

Inside the dark room, his eyes scanned the entire place, trying to find a clue. Yet, his eyes found Taecyeon’s name displaying in one computer with the message “Experiment 1 – FAILED”.

“What this suppose to mean?”

He whispered to himself as he tipped the computer to find clues, but none, the system needed a password. Then, deciding to not lose too much time, he keep scanning the place as he saw many long tubes with purple liquids, tubes that a human body could fit perfectly. Something was definitely wrong, Jesse knew now that Mr. D wasn’t a common fight’s host, actually he knew this at the same day he saw Mr. D, but now he just have sure.

However, he stopped his tracks when he saw an elevator on the background and an emergency ladder to the underground floor. He was about to use the elevator, but he shook his head quickly:

“If I use it, they might now I’m coming… I guess it’s better to use the ladder now.”

Listening his own advice, Jesse quickly slid by the iron and long ladder as he reached the mansion’s underground. As soon he turns around, he widened his eyes in shock to see that the place wasn’t only just a research and experiment lab, but a prison. He could listen the shouts of despair of the prisoners begging for mercy since they didn’t want to pass through any experiment again. Jesse felt a tug in his heart since he wanted to save those people of their suffering, but his mission was another.

*“Still… after I finish here… I will find out a way to set them free… this isn’t a way to treat a human being!”*

He thought deeply, but he keeps moving stealthily in the corridors with many cells, acting quickly to not be noted by the prisoners. When he finally left the prison complex, he closed his eyes and felt a pang in his heart since he really wanted to help those persons. However, while he sighed deeply and opened his eyes, he saw a strong, but a fancy door at the end of the corridor. He knitted his eyebrows in confusion since something was missing about this door in a place like this and everything was easy… something was fishy for sure. So each step he took further, he felt his heart beating anxiously as something important was behind that door.

He couldn’t understand why, but he placed his hand in her chest to calm his heart as his hand caressed his mother’ memento. Now, in front the door, he looked at the single part looking for freeze without make any damage on the door, and certainly to not discover that he was here. The sturdy door has a computer aside in the wall to place some kind of code. Thinking quickly, Jesse used his ice power to disarrange the device and open the door.

He took a last glance in the corridor as he entered in the room. Once he was inside, he creased his eyebrows in confusion since the place was an elegant feminine room, but still was a cell due the bars in everywhere and the sturdy door. His eyes scanned all around, but he stopped when he heard some whimpering or like someone was crying. Taking a deep breath, he walked slowly around a great bed and widened his eyes to see a middle age, but a beautiful woman kneeled on the floor with her back against the wall and her head lowered.

His heart crushed at the scene, he didn’t know the reason, but he found himself incredibly touched and sad for this woman. So, taking light steps close the woman, the latter stopped her crying when she felt she wasn’t alone. Raising her head slowly, she quickly hit the light button to see the intruder’s face. When the place was all lighten, Jesse shielded his eyes momentarily as he quickly apologized to the woman while he bowed his head repeatedly:

“I’m sorry! I’m really sorry, ma’am! You must be thinking I’m some kind of thug to invade your room, but I – I’m not, it’s just I…”

He stopped his apologizes when he saw that the woman was silent all the time. Finding this odd, he carefully raised his head to meet the agape and shocked woman. The latter was with her eyes widened as she was pointing her tremble finger to him while she slowly aroused from the floor. Each step she took close to him, Jesse felt his heart beating loudly as if it was trying to say something, yet he couldn’t help to realize that this woman’s face was awfully familiar. His head was aching, but why is this feeling?

Suddenly, when he realized the woman was in front of him, still agape as she stared at him attentively and tears rolled by her eyes. Feeling a tug in his heart, he acted naturally as leaned and wiped the woman’s tears with his hand and whispers gently:

“Please, don’t cry, ma’am. I will find a way to get you out of here. Could you tell me your name?”

The woman started to sob loudly as she couldn’t hold herself and cupped his cheeks gingerly to speak with her voice cracking:

“Oh my God! It’s- it’s really you, Jesse! Thank God! Thank God you are safe!”

She hugged him tight as she burrows her face in his chest to cry constantly and murmuring some incoherent words. Jesse was stunned, how could this woman know his name? Yet, the way she hugged him it made him feel so warm, so protected… just like the way his mother used to do it. Suddenly, he shook his head and gingerly pulled from the woman as he asks carefully while looking in her tearing eyes:

“I’m sorry, but do I know you? How did you know my name, ma’am?”

He creased his eyebrows confusedly when the woman smiled even in tears as she held his face tenderly. Unknowingly, he didn’t removed her hand since he felt quite comfortable under her touch, yet out of sudden, the woman got his mother’s memento and stared deeply in his eyes as she uttered truthfully:

“Jesse… don’t you recognize me? I was the one who gave you this.”

Suddenly he widened his eyes in surprise as he pulled from her hug and spoke confusedly:

“I – I think you are mistaking me with someone, ma’am. My mother gave to me when I—“

“When you were 5 years old?”

Jesse was agape once again and the woman came to his direction as she reached his hand and placed in her face while tears rolled by her eyes as she struggle to speak due the overwhelming feeling:

“Jesse… look in my eyes. I – I never fo-forgot you… since that day on the w-woods when I told you to-to run away and do-don’t look back…”

Now, tears were flowing by his eyes as he stared at her warmly with his heart beating fast. Yet, he wasn’t afraid; he knew this feeling very well and it was undeniable. But everything stopped when the crying woman uttered genuinely making him gasp in surprise while she thumbed his cheeks gingerly and held his face:

“It’s me, Jesse… my dear son… I am your… mother.”

*Dun dun dun...*

**TBC**

**Chapter 14**

“It’s me, Jesse… my dear son… I am your… mother.”

The brown haired guy could only stay agape as he widened his eyes in shock because of the current situation. Millions of emotions crashed into his heart at that time, when he realized what was happening, he already was tearing up and stuttering because of the shock:

“M-mo--mom?!”

Mrs. Jung smiled warmly as she closed her eyes with tears rolling by her eyes as well while nodding slowly. Opening her eyes, she met his shocked stare as she cupped his face gingerly like she always did when he was only a child. This time, Jesse was the one who closed his eyes to feel her touch; it felt so nostalgic and warm… the feeling was overwhelming, deep inside in his heart, he already had the answer. Not holding himself any longer, he snapped his eyes open and more fresh tears soaked his face as he pulled the middle-aged beautiful woman into a really tight hug. She was surprised with his sudden action, but she smiled while rubbing his back affectionately as he sobbed loudly and said:

“Mom! Mom! Mom!!! I mi-missed you so \*hiccup\* m-much!”

Feeling deeply touched, she smiled even in tears to know that her son never forgot about her. She patted his head gently as she returned the tight hug with the same intensity, whispering to his ear while cooing:

“You don’t know how long I dreamed for this day to come… my beloved son… it finally came true.”

He passed a good amount of minutes hugging his mother afraid that she could dissipate from his hands again. When he started to calm down in his mother’s tender comfort, he pulled from the hug slightly to take a good look of her face. With tears dropping from his eyes, he smiled tenderly as he hugged her tightly again while he uttered slowly:

“I will never let you go again, mom. Never again…”

She nodded her head with a smile as she thumbed his soaked cheek gingerly once he pulled away from the hug. No words could describe this beautiful moment, both of them dreamed of this for the longest time and now it finally happened, they won’t run away again, they won't ever be separated from each other once more. When Jesse started to calm down, he couldn’t help but to storm his long-lost mother with questions about what happened the night he thought she was killed or why she was being held all this time? It was when his question triggered her previous dread; the dangerous situation hit her mind like an arrow as she frantically explained everything.

Jesse felt his heart beating in adrenaline and in deep anger as he finally knew the culprit of their suffering. With his hands tightened and white knuckles, he quickly grasps his mother’s hand and yelled as he was ready to burst her out of her cell:

“I won’t let that freaking b@stard make you suffer again! Let’s run away, you need to be in a safe place!”

“Jesse, you can’t!” He stopped in his tracks momentarily as he stared at his mother confusedly, snapping in shock:

“I can’t?! That b@stard tortured you for FIFTEEN YEARS! And now you tell me that I CAN’T?! WHY?!”

“BECAUSE THIS IS A TRAP!”

“WHAT?!” He gasped in shock with his mother outburst, she looked so nervous and apprehensive, something was definitely wrong. He calmed himself and placed his hands on her shoulders as he asked softly, practically begging:

“No, mom. I know you are afraid, but I–I can't walk away and leave you here suffering again! Please don’t ask me this, because I won’t do it! I will only get out of here with you!”

She started to cry again and burrows her face in her hands as she shook her head rapidly, trying to take him off the cell. He couldn’t understand her action so he seized her hands and asked desperately:

“Mom! Why are you doing this?! Please, I be-beg you, co-come with me! Let’s get out of here!”

“No no no, this is all wrong, Jesse! Dorian is insane! Didn't you stop to realize how easy it was barge in his territory without being caught?! It was because he planned all of this!!!”

“Mom, pleas---“She cuts his words as she desperately bursts:

“He only lured you here to make sure that the young girl who stays with you all the time could be out of your protection!!! Jesse! You need to go find her now! She might be in danger! Hurry!”

He widened his eyes in horror as he felt his heart aching out of sudden. He gasped heavily snapped loudly in despair:

“Oh my God, no--- Tiffany!!!”

However, he was in a tough situation… if he goes now to save Tiffany, his mother would be left to behind with that mad man, but if he don’t, who knows what sick things he could do to her? His brain and heart were aching in despair for not knowing to do; it was when her mother placed her hand in his shoulder once she realized that tears were flowing by his eyes:

“Jesse, I know she is very important to you. Please, go save her, she needs you!”

“But-but what about you, mom?! How would I know if that sicko will hurt you again?!”

“We must have faith, I will be fine! I promise that we will see each other again! Now go, my son!”

He pondered onto his thoughts briefly and finally gave in as because didn’t have a choice, he would still find a way to save them both. He quickly nodded to his mom as he rushed out of her cell; she smiled weakly at his disappearing form from the corridor. When her sad smile weakened, she turns around… only to be surprised by someone turning her around and hugging her tightly. She smiled feeling a little more calm when she felt her son whispering gently to her ear:

“I will come back to rescue you! Wait for me, please!”

Then, he pulled from the hug and stared at her as he says before sprint off:

“I love you, mom.” She smiled with tears rolling by her eyes as she nodded answering:

“I love you too, son. Please, be careful!”

He nodded and finally left away with such amazing speed. Secretly, she clasped her hands together and closed her eyes as she returned to her cell with her heart apprehensive in her chest:

*“God… please, protect them. Please…”*

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

*[One hour ago at TaeSooFany’s dorm…]*

The three girls were sleeping peacefully in their beds by the dawn. Sooyoung was sprawled in her bed with her mouth wide open while she was snoring loudly; Taeyeon keep jolting in her mattress while solving some mathematic equations in her sleep… and right under the wall’s window, there was Tiffany who was trying to get some sleep while holding her phone in her right hand. However, she couldn’t admit that she was sleepy at all… these days, sleeping with Jesse made her extremely addicted to sleep in his warm embrace.

However, she knew that although they love sleeping together in each other’s arms, sometimes they would have to make some sacrifices. Yet, there was she checking her phone in every 5 seconds wondering when she would receive a message from him. Seeing that the time was passing and still nothing from her beloved, she sighs heavily and deepened her head on the pillow to get some sleep. Then, out of sudden, she was surprised with the phone vibrating. She flips it open hurriedly, eager to read the content:

“**To:** Fany

I’m waiting for you in my room now. Come, fast!

**From:** Jesse”

Unconsciously a wide smile crept in her lips as she quickly seated on her bed and wears her slippers silently. Standing up slowly, she had to make sure to not awake her companions up. Taking feather steps out the room, she whispered a sorry to her unconscious friends and smiled:

“Sorry, girls. But I have to see him.”

With that, she rushed to Jesse’s room trying to be more silent that she could, careful to not awake anyone. Now, in front of his room, she straightened herself and smiled coyly as she grabs the knob to turn it. However, she couldn’t help to realize that the lock was broken… almost if someone trying to barge in his room. Feeling worried, she entered carefully to not make any noise as she was in the dim room. Nonetheless, when she was about to hit the lights on, but she realized that the place was a mess, things were broken and dirty… someone definitely barged in…

Holding her breath apprehensively, something caught her eye… there was atop of the wooden table, Jesse’s phone blinking. She reached the object and saw the message that she received. Frowning a little, she felt her heart halt in realization… one, she wasn’t alone and two, this person… isn’t Jesse. Sensing the stranger sudden move, she quickly dodge a punch that it was about to hit the back of her head. She quickly recovered her position as she hastily grabbed the enemy’s arm and twisted behind the man in tux, she even gained a loud grunt from the thug and she yells at him:

“TAKE THAT!”

Then, out of sudden, the other thugs which were hidden in the room started to attack her. Still holding a grip on the Thug 1, she spanned her right leg which landed on the other guy chin, knocking him out at the same moment. Another thug came to her direction, it was when she released the first thug on the ground and grabbed her opponent’s arm as she gave three strong punches against his ribs, another knock out… however, the thugs were innumerable inside the room, with her adrenaline rising, she keep punching them down to keep her safety. But seeing that they wouldn’t stop, she shouts in anger:  
  
“What do you want from me?! And what you did with Jesse?! Answer me N.O.W!”

She gritted her teeth in anger at the thought that these thugs could have hurt Jesse. Feeling her hands shaking in anger, she was about to hit a thug who smiled slyly out of sudden. She refrained her action in confusion to see where the thug was looking to, however, when she was about to turn around… it was too late. A strong thug seized her tightly as the another one place an tissue with chloroform in her nostrils. She tried her best to flail herself free from the strong grip as she utters with her voice becoming slower with everything spinning around her:

“Wh-where is… Jes-se? Please… do-don’t hurt hi---…”

With that, Tiffany finally become unconscious entirely under the chloroform’s effect while the thugs carried her out of the room. One of them reached for a walk talkie inside his tux as he answered:

“Boss… it’s done. We are taking the girl.”

“Wonderful, good work! Bring her soon! I have plans for her!!!”

It was everything that Mr. D answered as his evil laugh filled the air and he rubbed his hands eagerly. He smiled devilishly as he whispered to himself:

“Let’s see how the little Jesse will deal to know what happened with his precious girl…”

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

[Current time – 3:00 AM at the Fighter’s Dorm]

\*Huff Huff Huff\*

It was everything that it could be heard between the corridors. Jesse was panting hard in adrenaline as he ran restlessly while he rushed to Tiffany’s room. Silently, he begged in his mind that nothing would happen to her, his heart already was aching deeply with anxiety. He practically jumped up the stairs to climb up as he finally reached her floor, running to her door, he started to knock the door on nonstop not even caring about the others. When no one was answering, he took a deep breath as he rested his arms on the doorway with his head down while he muttered desperately:

“Please, be there… please be there!”

In a snap of second, the door was open with a familiar figure. It was Taeyeon who was rubbing her eyes as she watched Jesse’s shattered semblance. Seeing tears at the corner of his frenetic eyes, she become more awake as she asked worriedly:  
  
“Jeshe… what happened?” Then, he panted and gulped deeply while asks eagerly:  
  
“Tae, is Tiffany here?!” Immediately, Taeyeon widened her eyes as she blurted:

“I thought she was with you! When I woke up, her bed was empty… Jesse, tell me wha—“

His semblance only gets worse as shook his head and ran to his room not letting Taeyeon end her question. Sooyoung who also awoken with the ruckus, she asked to Taeyeon what happened, yet the latter shook her head and decided to follow Jesse to his room. However, the restless guy ran by the corridor yelling desperately to himself:

“No! No! No! TIFFANY!!! WHERE ARE YOU?!”

Seeing his outburst, Taeyeon and Sooyoung quickly looked to each other in shock, and at that time, they realized that something was definitely wrong. They nodded to each other as they followed Jesse; the latter gasped in shock to see his door completely forced open and a messed room. It has signs of a recent fight everywhere, his frenetic eyes looked around at the entire room, looking for a clue about Tiffany’s location. With his heart crushing in each second, he desperately calls for her name:

“TIFFANY! TIFFANY, PLEASE ANSWER ME! WHERE ARE YOU?! WHERE ARE---!!!”

He felt his blood freeze when he saw a small amount of blood on the floor. He widened his eyes as his feet dragged him to the spot as he crouched to inspect the blood. It was when right in front of him, it was Tiffany’s phone blinking incessantly. Taking a deep breath, he rapidly grabbed the object to see the display. He gulped when he saw the message on her phone, unconsciously; his hands started to shake as he closed his eyes and gritted his teeth with pain and anger rising inside him while cursing himself for forget his phone on his room.

Closing his hand in fists, he quickly stood up when Taeyeon and Sooyoung gasped once they entered his room. Not too much after her, surprisingly his neighbor was also in shock, asking the same thing with his eyes wide open:

“I’m sorry I was in the bathroom…Oh… my God… …what happened here?!”

Taeyeon and Sooyoung asked the same thing as both of them were with their mouth hung open. As Tiffany’s best friends and also, her family… they couldn’t help but to feel deeply worried and anguished to not see signs of her. HeeChul rushed to Jesse and shook the shoulders of the disturbed guy:  
  
“Jesse! Wake up! What happened?! Where is Tiffany?!” Jesse was panting heavily as his eyes showed the reflection of his soul… emptiness; cold and lost…He hurriedly shook his head and pushed HeeChul hastily as he cry out loud:

“LET ME GO! I HAVE TO FIND HER! SHE MIGHT BE IN DANGER NOW!!!”

Stubbornly, Heechul frowned and clasped Jesse’s arm again, when the latter was about to storm out, Heechul simply adds while he nodded his head:

“I’m coming with you.”

He was his friend and Jesse’s semblance was so heartbroken that he could barely keep up unaware of Tiffany’s whereabouts. The brown haired guy quickly nodded to his neighbor as one tear fell by his eyes, however when they were about to run out the room, a voice stopped them:  
  
“We are coming with you!” Both guys turned to see Sooyoung and Taeyeon with a determined look in their faces. So the short one adds with a serious expression:

“Tiffany’s our friend, more than that… she is our sister, so if some freaking b@stard tries to do anything to her… we will make him pay!”

“I don’t know what happened, but I agree with Tae! Whoever did this… will regret it for messing with our Fany! Let’s go!”

Jesse nodded with a determined expression as he and his friends rushed all over the possible places that Tiffany could be…

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

Through the dawn, no signs of her… they searched in almost the entire island, but with unsuccessful results. With the despair taking over Jesse’s heart, he couldn't think anymore, he just wanted to find her soon… each second, his mind and conscious tortured him for what could happen to her if he doesn't find her soon. However, only when the four of them reunited on the island’s center, they couldn’t help to realize that they were practically the only ones on the island, although it was late, the island didn’t had signs of the crew or another fighters, it was almost like all of them left Jeju island.

Nonetheless, once Jesse watched his friends disappointed face, he fell on his knees and buried his face on his hands while breaking down… the pain was crushing him and it doesn’t matter how hard his friends tried to give him hope, he only felt something fading away from his hands. However, something unexpected happens… right in the island’s center, there was a huge wide screen. The display turn on by itself gained the quartet’s attention by the sinister voice:  
  
“Well well well, if it isn't little Jesse…”

At this time, Jesse widened his eyes in shock as he recognized the voice immediately and tensed his jaw. He stood up and turns around abruptly as he saw the “Duel” host… and his father’s murderer… Dorian Han. He felt his blood boiling furiously as he gritted his teeth with an angry expression, because now… he knows what this man is and what he is capable of doing, his mother told him the whole truth behind Mr. D or Dorian’s actions. And now… he felt his body ready to go into a berserk. Yet, before he could speak, Mr. D smiled deviously as he speaks cockily:

“By the look of your face, I don’t have reasons to hide myself anymore. Hmmm let me see, a little bird called Jane told anything? Hahahahahaha!!!”

“HAN! YOU BETTER LET MY MOTHER GO! N.O.W!” Suddenly Mr. D faked a sad expression as he thinks deeply while rubbing his chin:

“Oh really? Ouch, shame on you, Jesse. What kind of man are you who would leave your great love behind? Bring her up!”

*“Let me go!”*

Everyone gasped as they heard the familiar voice and Jesse couldn’t help to call as his expression softened:  
  
“Tiffany?!”

After spoke her name, she appeared on the huge display flailing herself while two strong bodyguards held her arms tightly. At the moment she stopped her moves when her eyes met Jesse’s, unconsciously she started to tear up and smiled sadly while looking at him:

“Jesse!”

His heart swayed as he felt so powerless for not being able to save her, he only could answer:  
  
“Tiffany! Just wait, I’m going to rescue you! Wait for m---”

“All right, let’s cut this cheap drama! Take her to my laboratory!“ Mr. D ordered as the bodyguards removed Tiffany from Jesse’s sight. The latter shook his head and practically begged: “NO! WAIT!”. This time, Mr. started to laugh again as he adds with a malicious tone while he observed Jesse’s broken semblance:

“You can see her again if you want to… maybe your mother too… hmmm, family or love… this must be a tough decision, don’t you agree?”

“WHAT TO DO YOU WANT?! They never had done anything to you! Why are you doing this?!”

Mr. D simply chuckles mockingly as he shrugs his shoulders and blurts:

“The question it’s… WHO I want… you see, Jesse… your father had a great source of power, but he was a fool and never used it at his own will… and you, my dear Jesse… you inherit his same power and defects as well… with your power, I can make a perfect soldier…I just need you to cooperate with me.”

“I would never make part of a plan of yours, you are sick! Killing innocent people and stealing their power is your perfect plan?!” Dorian faked a shocked expression which quickly was replaced by a dark semblance as he harshly answers:

“The answer it’s pretty simple… if you don’t cooperate… I will use your dear mother and girlfriend as my experiments and when I get tired of them… I will put an end on their miserable lives, so what---“

“IF YOU DO ANYTHING TO THEM, I WILL—“

“Haha, you what?! I believe you aren’t in the position to give me orders, Jung. So… what is it going to be?”

“…”

“I will do it.” Mr. D stopped his speech as saw Jesse with his head lowered. Out of sudden, he raised his head and glared at Mr. D as he spoke with a dead-serious tone:

“I will do it…just… don’t hurt them.” The last part his voice almost cracked due his sensible state. Meanwhile, Mr. D smiled victoriously as he brushed his goatee and blurts out:

“Hmmm wise words, kid. You have twenty-one hours to come to my mansion. And one last thing...” His tone becomes harsh as he narrowed his eyes while looking at Jesse’s friends:

“If I were you, I wouldn’t bring your little friends, or else, you wouldn’t like to anticipate your mother and your girl’s death, right? Each second is precious… Remember, I have cameras everywhere in this island… if you make any wrong move… I don’t need to end this sentence, do I?”

Jesse remained silent as Mr. D started to laugh like a maniac and the display turned off abruptly. Everyone was too shocked to speak anything, so out of sudden, Jess growls and shout in deep anger as he rushed to the large display and strikes with his fist, shattering to millions of pieces and creating a great hole on the wall. He panted heavily as his expression was dark, he was taken by the rage for sure, and nothing was worse than to see his beloved ones in that psycho’s hands…

However, when the trio was about to talk with him, another deep, yet familiar voice called them. They snapped in surprise to see someone coming to their direction, once the vision was clear, Sooyoung blurted in surprise:

“You? Bu-but what are you doing here?” The tall and good looking man smiled weakly at her as he looks to all of them. He scanned his surroundings as he whispers carefully:

“This place isn’t safe, come on over so I can help you get out of this island and rescue the prisoners.” Taeyeon raised a brow as she crossed her arms and snapped:

“What?! This is some kind of joke? How can we believe you?! You are one of their crew, right?!”

The tanned guy sighs heavily and whisper:

“You don’t have any choice. If we don’t plan something… all of us can be in danger!”

“But who are you anyway?! And why are you trying to help us?” HeeChul asked worriedly as the tall guy or rather, the Duel contest host finally introduced himself with a charming smile:

“Choi Siwon, pleased to meet you all. And about help you, say, without a backup plan, you guys are toasted! There is no way we can let this guy \*pointing to Jesse\* go to that mansion alone. Mr. D isn’t the kind of man who keep his word and about my reasons, well… I tried to give up for awhile and leave this place for once, but if I went further, they will hunt me down since they did the same thing to whoever turned their backs on Mr. D…”

Cutting the silence, Jesse walked to them with a troubled expression as he added:

“No, I don’t want any of you involved on this. It’s my problem; besides I don’t wanna anyone else get hurt because of me.” He said already preparing to go to the D Mansion; however he only stopped when someone held his arm, this person was Taeyeon who was looking at him in concern:

“Jesse, don’t ask us to stay out of this one. As we said before, Tiffany is our family.”

“And you need to totally make sure that I crack their bones if they try to do anything to Fany-ah”

After Sooyoung who already was cracking her knuckles, Heechul placed his hand on Jesse’s shoulder and added:

“You are not alone. We are going to rescue them, together.”

Jesse eased his expression as he was grateful to have such incredible friends. The host simply smiled in awe and gestured them to follow him as they had to prepare a plan and fast. As Mr. D said, each second its precious, and only who is inside the mansion knows which insanity he is capable to do…

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

The hours ran awfully slow, however Jesse marched against the D Mansion at night as the expected, stopping in front of the huge ornamented wooden door. The sturdy door was completely open with the Mr. D’ bodyguards waiting for Jesse’s arrival. One of them ordered coldly:  
  
“Move. Boss doesn’t like to wait.”

Jesse tensed his jaw, trying to hold his anger to not beat them up because he knew that everything he was doing, it was for love… he couldn’t risk his mother and Tiffany’s lives for a despaired act. He took a deep breath and started to walk as the bodyguards guided him by the mansion’s long aisle until reach an elevator. Pushing the buttons, all of them entered as they were going to the deepest level of Mr. D’s experience laboratory on the undergrounds.

However, Jesse felt a shiver in his spine when he heard the screams and the prisoners’ pleadings for freedom or simply for stop Mr.D’s madness. When the brown haired guy realized, he was in front of a large shed covered by sturdy steel plates without any kind of crack or window. At the top, there was a control room surrounded with hard and thick glass wall. Without warning, Mr. D bodyguards pushed him violently inside the hangar and hurriedly closed the door with an iron valve. Jesse quickly stood up from the floor and scanned his surroundings, when he was about to yell, that same sinister voice calls for him:

“Well… hello, Jesse! It’s nice to see you here! I’m glad that you considered my invitation.”

Mr. D spoke trough a microphone inside the control’s room as he smiled deviously to Jesse and beside him, there was Narsha watching Jesse with an undecipherable expression. The latter looked at her and shook his head with a disappointed look. So he gritted his teeth angrily as he snapped and pointed his finger to the tyrant:

“Yeah! And now, let my mother and Tiffany go! You already got me! Just let them go!”

Dorian simply chuckles mockingly as he shook his head and speaks:

“Tsk tsk tsk, poor Jesse. Did you already forgotten our plan? I called you here for a reason, so if you wanna see them again… and alive… I suggest you follow my orders.”

Jesse refrained his anger as he spoke coldly while glaring Mr. D:  
  
“What do I have to do?” Mr. D clapped his hands disdainfully as he pressed one button inside the control room which opened a steel wall to reveal a small room:

“Bravo! It’s good to see that you are cooperating. Now, you see that capsule over there? I want you enter on it and let Dr. Kang do the rest.”

At this same time, an old scientist aka Dr. Kang entered in the hangar and motioned Jesse to enter on the long capsule. Jesse couldn’t help to feel worried, if something happens to him, who can guarantee him that his mom and Fany were going to be all right? No, he couldn’t risk; suddenly, he glared at Mr. D and barked:

“No! Show me mother and Tiffany’s first! I need to know they are safe!”

Suddenly Mr. D knocked the table in anger aside him as he barked angrily back making Narsha jolt in shock to his outburst:

“You don’t have any choice! Or if you prefer, I can end with their lives right before your eyes?! Is that what you want?!”

At his words, Jesse felt his heart piercing due the thought. Unable to utter any word, he turns around and entered on the capsule. This time, Mr. D grinned maliciously again as he utters while crossing his arms:

“Good boy. Dr. Kang, you can start the extraction now!”

“Yes, boss.” The old scientist simply nodded as he used some metal chains to hold Jesse’s arms and legs on the capsule while the latter already lies. Dr. Kang tapped his keyboard and got a syringe with a purple liquid to apply on Jesse’s left arm, precisely at his pulsating vein. Proceeding to apply many plugs all over Jesse’s body, once he finished, he looked to Mr. D and the latter nodded to him to go on; it was when Dr. Kang went to a large panel and activated one of three levers. The first one closed the capsule, followed by the second lever which filled the tube with a purple liquid and lastly, Dr. Kang lowered the last lever as created a huge shock in Jesse’s body which the latter keep holding his scream until he couldn’t anymore and grunted in pain loudly:

“ARGGGGGGGHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!”

Mr. D watched the scene with a wide smile, seeing Jesse’s suffering was something sweet for him and for his plan. So after many rounds of experience, Jesse felt like his body was burning from inside out, his whole body was numb, he barely could think. It was when Dr. Kang lifted the three levers at once as the capsule absorbed the liquid and opens slowly. The scientist walked behind the capsule and removed a hidden compartment. He placed the small steel box atop his table and switched two valves as the box opens abruptly creating a high sound of held pressure.

The box was filled with nitrogen’s gas; Dr. Kang putted his mask and gloves to remove the awaited content. Once he fished the object inside the box, it was a small tube with a blue, yet scintillating liquid; he turned to Mr. D and showed the results. The latter smiled and utters in content:

“Great! Dr. Kang, put the essence on the red cargo.”

The scientist complied as he carefully placed the “Jesse’s essence” inside of the sturdy box again and placed inside a small red cargo. Pressing some buttons, the box was transferred inside the control’s room where Mr. D quickly opened and smiled widely to see the shining blue liquid. It was when he turns around and sees Jesse trying to stand up, he scorned at him and shook his head:

“You see, Jesse? Science can always beat your stupid magic. With this, I can make the perfect soldier at my command… no… with this content; I can be the powerful soldier! Hahahahahahahaha!!!”

Jesse’s condition was precarious; it was like his energy was completely drained from his body. There were small injuries all over his flesh and the feeling of burning still was making almost insane. But then, he knew he couldn’t give up, he knew that inside of Dorian’s mansion he would be unprotected, but it was a risk he was willing to do it to save his beloved ones. However, he rolled around of the capsule and fell flatly on the floor. Mr. D keep laughing at his powerless figure as Narsha looked at Jesse worriedly. Out of sudden, Mr. D ceased his laughing as he grabbed the essence and spoke to the microphone:

“Well, I would enjoy see you suffering the rest of the day, but I have plans more important to do. Now, if you excuse me, there is an experience I should conclude.”

“Wa-wait r-right th-there!” He raised his eyebrow when he heard Jesse panting deeply as the latter stood up slowly while holding his arm. He glared at Mr. D and shakes his finger as his voice cracked:

“Yo-you said that yo-you would l-let them… go! Whe-where a-are they?! Show me … NOW!”

Jesse keeps glaring at him angrily as he was panting hard to regain his strength, but it was almost impossible since he was REALLY disabled physically. Out of sudden, Mr. D opened a huge sinister smile and shook his head as he spoke again into a sarcastically tone:

“Of course! You are absolutely right! What was I thinking? Jun, bring his precious girl now! I believe she is more than ready.”

“Yes, sir. Guards, open the gate!” The bodyguard yelled to the other ones as a large steel door opened on the hangar. Jesse widened his eyes in reaction, his heart started to beat rapidly when he saw a familiar silhouette coming to his direction. However, a few meters away from him, he just wanted to run to her and held in his arms, although his body was weak even to stay on foot. However, he noted she was with her eyes closed and there something very different about her… her aura wasn’t so bright and pure like before… it was a dark one. Feeling worried and heart halting due the sight, he calls her:

“Tiffany!”

But she didn’t answer him or even opened her eyes to return his call. It was when he saw some marks on her arms and another ones in her neck, like small perforations in her milky skin. Unconsciously, he gritted his teeth in rage as he frowned angrily to Mr. D. and finally barked furiously:

“WHAT DID YOU DONE WITH HER?! YOU PROMISED THAT YOU WOULDN’T HARM HER!!!”

“Hahahahahaha!” Jesse’s blood was boiling in rage, how could someone do this to his Tiffany? He glared at Dorian and snapped coldly with his teeth shown and eyes turning into a blue color:

“Han… if anything happens to her… I will hunt you like a dog you are and kill you, b@astard!”

Mr. D faked a shocked expression as he raised his hands in “defeat” and speaks into cocky tone:

“Oh, little Jesse it’s showing his true self, hmm … let me tell you something, Jung? Do you know what happens when ice… meets fire? Hahahahahaha Wake up, Tiffany!”

Jesse jolted in surprise when Tiffany opens red eyes out of sudden and turned her head to Mr. D. The latter smiled deviously and ordered:

“Tiffany… kill him.” She turned her attention to Jesse, who widened his eyes for her in shock to see her red eyes. He shook his head and felt his heart crushing at the sight of Tiffany cold and dead eyes. She positioned herself to fight and utters into a lifeless voice:

“Yes… master.”

Jesse could only step backwards as he was shocked and heartbroken to see his beloved as a lifeless slave. He gulped deeply with adrenaline rising in his body when she raised her right hand against him and a huge flame formed into her palm. Ready to attack him, Jesse whispers in horror and deception:

*“No, Tiffany…”*

*!!!*

“TIFFANY! NOOOOO!!!”

**TBC**

**Chapter 15**

“TIFFANY! NOOOOO!!!”

Jesse’s scream echoed all over the sturdy hangar. He shook his head in denial not able to believe that his beloved, his angel could be manipulated by that heartless psycho. His heart stopped the moment she turned her head to him and started to walk into his direction. Her eyes were empty and soulless, there wasn’t any sign of her lively and cheerful spirit anymore, just an empty wandering body…Not believing in his eyes, he screams almost in despair:

“Tiffany! Don’t you know me?! It’s me, Jesse! You have to remember!”

At this moment, Tiffany’s expression remained motionless as she kept walking to him. Seeing that she wouldn’t stop her tracks, he started to move to backwards, yet without turning around. Once again he tried scream as his heart shattered into pieces to see Tiffany so cold:

“Fany! Please! I don’t wanna fight you! WAKE UP!”

“HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!!!”

Suddenly, Jesse turned his attention to Mr. D who was laughing loudly as he watched the whole scene by the thick glass. Jesse felt his blood boiling as he gritted his teeth when Mr. D started to speak into a disdainful tone while he shook his head:

“Tsk tsk tsk… No use, Jesse. She will only listen to my commands.”

Frowning his brows angrily, Jesse snapped into a raspy voice while he pointed to Mr. D:

“WHY HAVE YOU DONE TO HER?! SHE IS INNOCENT, YOU FREAKING B@ST@ARD!!!”

“Awww looks like our little Jesse is getting angry… such a pity…” He added into a mocking voice and a sinister smile. That time, the tyrant walked inside the control room while he keeps his eyes on Jesse’s angry figure. Dorian simply shrugs his shoulders and utters as Jesse didn’t gave up of trying waking Tiffany from her lifeless form:

“If I were you I wouldn’t do that... You see… I implanted some micro robots all over her body. These small robots lodged mainly in her brain which gave me full authority for her actions. They can even decipher any kind of abnormality against the parameters that I personally programmed. So if they detect any kind of change of her behavior, they will activate the self destruction system.”

At this moment, Jesse’s heart stopped as he widened his eyes and chocked on his words and asked painfully:

“Wha-what?!”

Mr. D chuckled deviously as he brushed his goatee with a sinister smile playing on his lips:

“In other words, IF she tries to disobey me which it’s what I find hard since this system doesn’t have flaws… these micro robots will kill her from inside out. Now it’s up to you to convince her and let her die or be a gentleman and let the love of your life kill you! Hahahahahahahhahahaha!!!”

Jesse gasped loudly and his heart crushed when he heard the sentence “*kill her…”.* His whole body trembled only with the thought, he couldn’t do this. How could he hurt his first and only love? He whispered to himself in despair, trying hard to hold his tears:

“No…”

“Hahhahaha! \*Ahem\* Tiffany… kill him!” Mr. D ordered as Tiffany turned her face to Jesse who was staring at her in shock as she spoke into a cold voice:

“Fight!”

In one a blink of an eye, Tiffany snapped her fingers and a high flame formed in her right hand. Soon, she dashed against Jesse to initiate her multiple attacks with punches and swift kicks. As soon as Jesse saw her fired fist coming into his view, he quickly recovered his position as he rapidly dodged to his right. She huffed angrily and not gave him a rest as she jumped in front of him to plant a kick in his face. Even with his feeble condition, he was able to dodge her attacks, but he had to admit that her speed was surprisingly better as her attacks were able to make a huge damage as if he wasn't prepared… He couldn’t help to think bitterly while avoided her punches:

*“I would be proud of you if it weren’t for these conditions…”*

“YA!!!” He was back to his senses as she yelled and tried to punch him right in his face. He managed to block her strong fist with his arms, creating an “X” position. However, he distracted himself as he couldn't see her face so close of his. His being crushed to see her dead eyes and expressionless semblance, it hurts so much, he could barely stand seeing her red eyes. His mind worked by itself as flashes of their moments together were lively in his soul… his realizations, their dance, their confession, their first kiss, their love… how could he throw everything they already passed to love each other out of the window?

His heart couldn’t ignore it, how could he hurt the person that he loved so endearingly? The answer was simple, he couldn’t…However, everything turned blank when he felt a sudden pain on his stomach followed by another one in his face. While he was dozing off, Tiffany took this opportunity to punch his stomach and his face directly as Jesse was violently thrown against the wall, with his back hitting first. He couldn’t believe it, she… she really punched him…Slowly, he brought his hand to his lips and realized that it was wet. He placed his hand in front of his eyes and doubled the size of his eyes when he saw blood in his fingers.

He stared at it intensely, almost as if he was trying to convince her with his eyes, but none, she remained expressionless. Nonetheless, their stare was broken with Mr. D's maniac-laughter:

“Hahahaha Wonderful! Jesse, I must admit! You did a great job training her! She is amazing and will be very useful as one of my puppets! HAHAHAHAHAHA!!!”

Jesse growled angrily at Mr. D while the latter was laughing and he quickly turned his attention to Tiffany… he won’t give up on her. She kept pursuing him with multiple punches and he managed to avoid or defend himself from her strikes. But the point its… he knows that he wouldn’t be able to dodge himself much longer, his speed was decreasing and his energy was already at the end, he knew that this situation was only getting worse. Due to her punch on his stomach, he was breathing with difficulty and his sight started to turn into a big blur as he called at her again with his tone rising:

“TIFFANY!”

“…” No response from her.

Minutes later, the only sound in the place was coming from Jesse’s panting form. The latter was with his shoulders stumbled to forward as he could barely stand up. His body was ready to give in, but his heart was against the idea. Suddenly, one idea came to his mind… but it was almost suicide… however he had to try… he would do anything to save her, even when this means putting his life in danger…

*“I need more time…”*

He talked into his mind with his eyes closed. Regaining his fight posture, he wiped the blood on his lips and looked at Tiffany intensely. Shaking his head, he speaks with his voice cracking as his eyes started to moisten:

“I know you can hear me, Tiffany…If you look inside of yourself… you will know who I am.”

He bit his lip as he utters honestly with his eyes shining while he whispers:

“You know that I… that I love you… you have to remember me… Fany-ah…”

She only stared at him motionlessly, but out of sudden something in her mind whisper faintly:

*“Jesse?”*

In a split of second, she started to feel a headache as her eyes changed from its red color to brown. Jesse gasped when he saw it, it was quick, but he was sure that he saw it or else Tiffany’s hand wouldn’t be trembling as she was trying to lower her arm. But the pain was too much, however out of sudden, she screams as her eyes recovered the same red color and she dashed again him, grunting:

“Rghhhhh!! Shut up!!”

Jesse dodges it, yet he knew it, he knew that he had a small chance to make her regain her conscious. Nonetheless, the big problem was not activating the micro robots, but how could he do this while Mr. D was watching them? If he realizes any kind of mood change on Tiffany, he will activate the system promptly. Once again, Jesse realized that he didn’t have choice, there is only thing to do and definitely isn’t to hurt Tiffany. He tried to buy more time, until their friends make their move, but it was hard, the fatigue already was taking over his body…

Punches, kicks and fireballs filled the air; even after some minutes, Jesse felt his body languishing. He can’t stand it anymore; Tiffany glared at him as he sighs heavily and slowly speaks with his eyes glued on her:

“Tiff-Tiffany… \*breathing heavily\* you… you have to w-wake up…”

“Arghhht!” She attacked him and he barely could defend as he was hastily thrown against the steel wall again due to her counter attack on his stomach. He fell on his knees and coughed blood, still, he slowly stood up with blood dripping from his lips and tears rolling by his eyes, he uttered weakly:

“I–I won’t fight… you… If y-you want ki-kill me… do it, because… I won’t use my h-hand… to hurt yo-you… I just can’t…”

Unconsciously, Tiffany stopped her strikes with a sudden pain in her heart. Something inside of her was crying and screaming from sadness, she wanted to fight against it, but the pain all over her body hurts her like a warning. Out of sudden, she moved by herself and dashed against him to plant more punches on his weak body. Every punch, she felt a warm liquid descending by her cheeks as her heartache only got worse.

Jesse was lying on the ground totally defeated as bruises were all over on his body, he didn’t have any strength to go on. Tiffany stared at him deadly as Mr.D clapped his hands in delight while laughing, but he ceased suddenly as he ordered earnestly:

“Bravo! Now finish him off already!”

At Dorian’s command, Jesse opened his eyes faintly as he saw Tiffany walking slowly to his direction. She stopped and created a fireball in her hand, but she stood still… their eyes met and he saw the tears rolling by her eyes. He smiled weakly at her as he closed his eyes and waited for his fate as a whisper escaped from his lips and piercing deeply her heart:

“I will love you… no matter what happens… F-Fany…”

…

\*BOOM\* \*BOOM\* \*BOOM\*

“What’hell is that?!” Mr. D cursed in shock when he heard a loud explosion coming from above the laboratory. It was when a robotic voice alarmed:

\*Intruder alert! Intruder alert!\*

He narrowed his eyes and ordered to his thugs harshly:

“What are you doing here, your idiots?! Go see what it’s happening!!!”

The thugs quickly nodded as they left the room. In a snap of seconds, one of them came back panting as he utters rapidly:

“Boss! The intruders are crushing down the mansion! They are coming to our laboratory! For I can see, they are trying to go to the prison and set our prisoners free!”

Angrily, Mr. D gets the microphone and yelled:

“Jesse! You better beg for your mother and friends life now! Because once I get to them, I will crush them like rats!”

He turned to his thug and shoved him out of the way as he grabs the essence and left the room, including Narsha. After everyone left the room to seize the intruders attack, the entire place was empty. Jesse opened his eyes and realized that Tiffany stood still. With his last energy, he hissed as he weakly stood up, faltering a little; she recovered her senses as Jesse spoke:

“Tiffany…wake up!”

Feeling the sudden pain in her body once again, she was forced to attack. She started to run to him as she yells with tears rolling by her eyes, preparing to give him a punch:

“YAAAAAA----!!!”

That time, Jesse was faster… He quickly disappeared on the air and appeared before her. Before she could move, he quickly surprised her as he raised his arms and pulled her for a tight embrace. She widened her eyes in shock when she felt his arms around her so warmly and into a caring way. Those micro machines were making her break the embrace to hit him, but inside of her mind, she barely could hold herself because this familiar feeling... *so warm*… However, she stopped when she heard his gentle voice in her ear as he cradled the back of her head while pulling her even more inside his hug:

“You… remember the first day we saw each other?” He stopped briefly as he brushed her hair tenderly and burrows his head on the crook of her neck:

“I was bedazzled when I looked at your beautiful and warm eyes for the first time… at that second I knew that my life wouldn’t be the same again…”

He inhaled her hair and took a deep breath as he continues, surprised that she remained still:

“I will never forget the day you fell over that tree to my arms… that moment I didn’t want to let you go… and I realized that every day you would conquer my heart every time I learned something new about you.”

Suddenly he frowned sadly as he gulped deeply, not stopping his caressing her back:

“After many hardships… I finally confessed what I felt for you. Tiffany… you taught me what love means when I saw your kindness, naivety and pure heart.”

He stopped briefly when he felt her body trembling in his arms; he felt his heart aching with the feeling as he thinks:

*“She might be fighting against it.”*

He pulled slightly to stare at her red eyes, but this time they weren’t so cold like before, her expression was changing… *“Just a little more”* he thinks. With tears rolling by their cheeks, hearts pressed against each other, he whispers with a sorrowful expression, still holding her in his arms:

“Tiffany… if you are in there somewhere… please… listen to me...”

He looked at her tenderly as he always did with his eyes overflowing with love, he whispers sincerely and cupped her face gingerly:

“… I love you and… I know you love me… Please, Fany… don’t give up! I–I can’t live without you. Don’t give up on yourself, don’t give up on us!”

“Je-Jess-sse?” Tiffany whispered weakly as she stared at Jesse’s melting eyes. The latter widened his eyes when he heard her calling his name, he quickly held her by her shoulders as he asks hurriedly:

“Tiffany! Do-do you remember me?!” Before she could answer, a sharp pain attacked her brain.

She cried out as she fell on her knees with her hands holding each side of her head. The pain was unbearable; certainly it was the micro machines effect…

Seeing her beloved in pain, Jesse’s heart ached as he quickly kneeled in front of her and placing his hand atop of hers, asking worriedly:

“Tiffany?! What’s wrong?!” She started to shake her head as tears rolled by her eyes. Choking her tears, she screams in pain:

“KYAAAAAAAAAA~~~~!!! IT BURNS!!!”

At this moment, Jesse had an idea, it was very risky, but it was the only way to make Tiffany set herself free from those evil micro robots. He quickly held her by her shoulders as he speaks worriedly:

“Fany, don’t let those machines take over you! You must destroy them by inside out, hurry!”

Her body started to shake as she felt these machines hurting her, but at Jesse’s tenderness, she faintly nodded while whimpering. Closing her eyes, she concentrated her fire chi to burn these parasites. However, it looks like Mr. D thought of everything, since the micro machines detected the change of behavior; it activated the counting by itself to start the self destruct system. They must hurry before it activates completely.

Seeing her painful expression, Jesse gasped in shock with droplets of sweat descending his forehead to his neck when he saw some kind of steam was emerging from her body. The pain was intense, she barely could stay still; more seconds she wouldn’t last…although her elemental was fire, he could see the pain in her expression. Only to look at her, he could say that she couldn’t go on… Out of sudden, he thinks into a last idea, it would be very dangerous for both of them, principally for him, but he didn’t care if that means to save her life.

He took a deep breath and surprised her as he wrapped his arms around her and placed her head on his chest. With his arms around her, he rested his head on the crook of her neck. Slowly, Tiffany mumbled weakly due the pain in her body:

“Jes-se… yo-you can’t… you w-will kill yourself…” He shook his head and hugged her even more tightly as she felt something soaking her neck… his tears. It was when she heard his soft whisper while something started to cool her body:

“I don’t care… I promised that I would protect you and stay with you until the end; I’m not giving up now! I won’t lose you again!”

His cooling aura started to surround her body as she kept burning the parasites robots inside her body. It was really refreshing for Tiffany since her energy was practically drained and if Jesse wasn’t refreshing her body and leveling her temperature, she would've ended up killing herself. So, seconds passed while they remained stilled at the other’s arms to finish the ‘purification’. Out of sudden, Tiffany frowned in pain as she finally screams when the micro machines were completely destroyed and evaporated from her body:

“KYAAAAAAAAAAA~~~~!!!”

At this same moment, unable to go on, she fainted in Jesse’s arms. The latter widened his eyes in concern as he started to shake her body and calling her name:

“Tiffany! Tiffany! Wake up! Stay with me! Please, don’t leave me!”

Tears rolled by his cheek and fell on her soft cheek while he embraced her unconscious body caringly and kissed the crown of her head repeatedly. And if it was like a magical touch… his heart halted when he heard her faint call:

“Jes…se?”

He closed his eyes and smiled in relief as he realized that her tone was back to normal. Slowly, she also wrapped her arms around him as she burrows her face on his rigid chest, mumbling softly:

“Jesse… I – I…” He pulled from the hug slightly to take a good look at her face. His smile widened when he saw that same of brown and warm eyes again which melted him ever since he had met her. She gasped to see what she done with him… there was a cut on his left cheek and his lips were bleeding a little, bruises all over his body and his clothes were torn with visible cuts or holes. Engulfed by the guilty feeling, she became more awake while she cupped his cheeks tenderly and stared at him frenetically. Her lips were trembling and her heart was crumbling at the sight, she lowered her head in shame to do this to someone whom she loves as she muttered weakly and chocked in tears:

“J-Jesse, I – I’m s-so sorry! I – I heard you, I wan-wanted to wake up, b-but I co-couldn’t control myself… please, forgive me! I do-don’t deserve you after what I done!”

She was surprised when Jesse clasped her chin gingerly to make her look into his hazel eyes. Her heart melted with his intense, yet lovingly gaze; suddenly he thumbed her cheeks due to the tears and cupped her face so carefully, as if she was made by glass. Two hearts started to beat faster as they held a meaningful stare, out of sudden; he leaned with his forehead against hers as he whispers affectionately:

“I vowed to always stay with you and to protect you… there is no way that I would let you go again…”

Overwhelmed with such warm feelings, she burst in tears as she wrapped her arms around his neck and pulled him for a desperate lovingly kiss. They remained like this for sometime as Jesse’s arms surrounded her waist and pulled even more to his arms. He caressed her back tenderly as they poured their love onto the passionate kiss. However, both of them wanted to make the kiss last, yet they knew which kind of condition they were and most than anything, their friends needed their help. Tiffany pulled from the kiss slowly as she didn’t resisted and leaned again to envelop his bottom lip on hers to kiss and nib gently. Once they parted, panting a little, she opened her eyes while Jesse remains with his eyes closed as she whispers breathlessly:

“I love you, Jesse. Thank you for not giving up on me.” He blushed and opened his eyes to meet her warm ones with his caring expression:

“I love you too, Fany. I will always be here with you, always.”

Slowly, he stood up and helped her stand up as well. They held their hands as Jesse spoke with a determination:

“We must find a way to get out of here. We must reach the others before Han!” Tiffany creased her brows in confusion as she asks:

“Others?” He nodded as he face palmed himself forgetting to tell her the plan:

“Right, I will tell you on the way. But now… Fany, stand back while I try to break this door!”

Jesse carefully placed Tiffany behind him as he realized that his power was coming back to his body, yet in a slow pace, still it was better than nothing. However, he was surprised when Tiffany passed by him with a confident smirk on her face as she raised her index finger against the steel door:

“Let me handle it, Jesse. You already strained yourself too much today.”

Suddenly, a flame formed into her fingertip and in a split of second, she throws a fireball on the door’s valve, melting it right away and opening the door. Jesse was agape as Tiffany eye-smiled at him and motioned him to go further:

“After you.” He snapped from his trance and chuckles as he quickly reached her hand and intertwined their fingers. Together they ran due the long aisles while Jesse told Tiffany the whole plan, she still has a lot to catch up on… secretly she thanked God for having such great friends and love. However, they stopped their tracks when they saw a bifurcation on the way. They quickly looked each other worriedly, although they knew that they had to continue the plan, both of them were deadly worried with each other, even more Tiffany because she knew about Jesse’s fragile condition. He tugged her hand as he took a deep breath saying:

“Fany, I need go that way to find Han before he escapes. You go find the others and please… rescue my mom.”

She widened her eyes frenetically as she shook her head, pleading:

“But Jesse, what about you?! You don’t have energy to fight anymore! There is no way I can let you go alone!”

The corner of his moved to upwards as he shook his head. Then, he pulled her hands and her to his body as he whispers using one of his hands to hold her chin gingerly:

“Tiffany, look at me.” She refused at first since once she did it, she would end up tearing up and she couldn’t look weak now. Reluctantly, she raised her head to meet his melting hazel eyes; then taking a deep breath, he leaned as he used his other hand to put a strand of her hair behind her ear:

“I’m not feeling weak anymore, actually… I couldn’t feel any better.” She creased her eyebrows in confusion and asked:

“B-but how come?” He smiled lovingly as he pulled for his tender grasp. Blushing in response, she felt shivers when he whispered tenderly close to her face:

“When I am with you, I feel stronger than ever. There is no way for me to give up so easily knowing that I have someone special to come back to.”

“Jesse…” Her heart lapped abruptly with his sincere and lovingly words. Once again, he knows how to capture her heart. But then, their time was short, so not wasting any second more, he asked gently without take his eyes from her:

“Fany, please, rescue my mother. She is down at the prison’s section.”

“But Jesse, how will I find her? Or how will she trust me?”

That moment, he stopped and realized the most obvious thing. He quickly removed his esteemed medallion and placed around Tiffany’s neck as he whispered gently:

“With this, she will know that you are with me. Besides…” He stopped briefly to rest his hand on her shoulders as he speaks caringly and looking deeply in her eyes:

“This will be my promise that I will come back to you.”

They held a meaningful stare as not holding herself she pulled him for a tight hug and whisper an “I love you” in his ear and deepens her head on the crook of his neck. He whispered the same thing lovingly as Tiffany suddenly pulled from the hug and started to run to the first curve while she was sniffing. Jesse stood there waiting for look back and she did, before disappearing from his sight, she turned around and they held a longing stare. They nodded to each other and Tiffany finally turned around to leave, already tearing up. She quickly wiped her tears and vowed to herself:

*“I must be strong for him. Jesse, I won’t disappoint you… but you better come back for me!”*

-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-

Tiffany stealthily reached the prison’s level, but before she could reach her friends, she must rescue Jesse’s mother first. Who knows what madness Mr. D could do to harm her? Besides, Jesse was counting with her, she won’t fail again. Of course, she found some Mr. D’s thugs on the way, but nothing that she couldn’t handle it. Her hope and love worked like a boost in her body; trashing their unconscious bodies on the ground, she rushed to find the security level of the prison, to the place where Jesse’s mom rest.

However, when she was about to go further, she heard some steps which made her stop abruptly. Looking quickly to her surroundings, she saw nobody; but being careful, she started to walk again, yet completely aware for a sudden move. As if she premeditated, she felt someone behind her, before the person could strike her, she swiftly turn around and blocked the punch. Tiffany creasing her eyebrows angrily as she hissed:

“Hmph I should've known…get out of my way… Narsha!”

The woman raised her brows in surprise as she asked coldly:

“Oh, so you do know me.” Tiffany scoffed and positioned herself for a fight:

“I already discovered who you were since I broke up with Taecyeon!”

Narsha gasped in shock and asked:

“How did you know?!” Tiffany scoffed again and explains while she prepared herself:

“After I found it that Taecyeon cheated me on the time, I saw you constantly with him after that. But to be honest, I didn’t care anymore…”

She carried on with her explanation as her eyes shone with the feeling of an overflowed heart:

“But this isn’t important now…I didn’t care anymore because I when I found Jesse… he filled the emptiness of my heart and I won’t disappoint him! Now, move! I have to find his mother.”

Narsha shook his head and prepared herself as well, standing before Tiffany:

“I’m sorry, Tiffany. But you won’t pass here without fighting with me.”

Tiffany huffed and stared at her with a determinate face as she cracked her knuckles and gestured with her index finger:

“Come and get it!”

"!!!"

**TBC**

**Chapter 16**

“Come and get it!”  
  
Positioning herself, Tiffany stared fiercely her adversary while the latter remains calm and cold. However, when Tiffany was thinking that her enemy wouldn’t move, she was wrong; in a split of second, Narsha charged against her. The latter swiftly activated her hidden weapon, in that case, a special glove with sharp blades on her fingertips. Tiffany widened her eyes and managed to dodge from the frontal attack in the last minute; she jumped to backwards and whispered amusedly:  
  
*“She is fast indeed… aish… this going to be harder than I thought…”*  
  
Taking a deep breath, Tiffany throws herself to forward for a hasty attack, which Narsha quickly premeditated and evaded without any kind of hardship. After that, the two women clashed into a fierce fight filled with punches, kicks and skilful moves. However, the fight was hard and Tiffany has to admit that not even one of her strikes managed to hit Narsha. So, dashing against her enemy, Tiffany grunted and gave a punch in Narsha’s stomach, which the latter managed to block in the last second. Widening her eyes in surprise, Tiffany was shocked to see how Narsha evaded all her attacks. Yet, her train of thoughts was abruptly stopped when the adversary used this chance to kick Tiffany’s stomach:  
  
\*Gasp\* “Arghhh…”  
  
Tiffanly was roughly thrown against the wall as she hit her head first. Coughing heavily to recover her breath and holding her head in pain, Tiffany looked to Narsha and become surprised when the latter was charging against her once again. Since it was too late to block the attack, Tiffany tried to throw herself to backwards to avoid the frontal strike, which actually worked. Yet she felt a sharp pain in her cheek, once she touched her left cheek, she gasped to see her hand stained with blood. She looked to Narsha in shock after realize that her enemy managed to cut her left cheek. The glare duel prevailed as Tiffany frowned angrily to Narsha and the latter kept staring at her emptily and coldly. Out of sudden, Narsha shook her head and stared at Tiffany as she calmly snapped:  
  
“See? You are too despaired in your attacks. If you can’t even hit me, then how do you think that you will be strong enough to face Mr. D?”  
  
Tiffany breathed heavily as those cold words slashed her being with the truth and lowered her head thinking. Narsha had a point, if she doesn’t think before attack, this could cost her life. Feeling in shame, she heard Narsha continue:  
  
“I thought that this moment would it be worthy to fight for… but I guess I was wrong…”  
  
Narsha stared at Tiffany coldly and an idea clicked in her mind: “I think this will work out.” Scoffing loudly, Narsha crossed her arms and uttered spitefully:  
  
“You are weak just like your stupid boyfriend…”  
  
Unconsciously, Tiffany tensed her jaw and clenched her fists angrily as Narsha continued her mocking:  
  
“Well, I guess this can’t be helped. You are a useless… you didn’t even were able to protect your beloved boyfriend… Tsk I bet that Mr. D already has eliminated that scumbag…”  
  
Tiffany widened her eyes in shock as the words were piercing her soul… no, she couldn’t believe… Jess was counting with her; he even managed to hurt himself only to not hurt her. With a heart beating furiously in her chest, she gritted her teeth as the anger was filling her being. She was feeling ashamed to not be able to attack her opponent after all her training with Jessi, but… she couldn’t stand someone saying bad things about the one she loves. Shooting her head up, she glared at Narsha angrily as she slowly stood up while holding her stomach. Narsha creased her brows in surprise seeing Tiffany recovery, then, the latter closed her knuckles in tight fists as she whispered angrily:  
  
“I know I am not the best fighter… and certainly I am not the most qualified to be here…”  
  
Tensing her jaw again, she hastily pointed her index finger to Narsha and warned as her eyes gleamed in hope and determination:  
  
“But if you think that I will lower my head and give up easily… you are wrong! You can slay me with those words that I don’t care! But don’t you dare talk about this about Jessi! He is counting with me and I won’t quit! So you better back off and let me pass!”  
  
After a while, an amused smile crept in Narsha’s lips as she placed her hand on her chin, uttering:  
  
*“Hmmm… interesting…This girl has guts…”*   
  
Preparing herself, she gestured her hand and tantalized Tiffany:  
  
“Let’s continue… shall we?”  
  
They quickly positioned themselves for the true fight. Tiffany raised her left fist before her face as the other hand was leveled down as if she was joining her energy secretly. Breaking the silence, this time, Narsha was the one who dashed against Tiffany as she exposed her bladed at her fingertips, ready to slash her opponent:  
  
“Yaahhhhhhhhh!!!”  
  
Yet, in the last second when she was about to attack Tiffany, the latter yelled as she placed her right hand before her and screams powerfully:  
  
**“FIRE BURST!”**  
  
“Wha--!!!”  
  
Narsha widened her eyes in shock as Tiffany managed to direct a crescent fireball in her right hand into her stomach. Not being able to dodge this time, Tiffany goes further and pushed herself to forward as she skillfully hit her stomach in square with a strong attack. Narsha flew abruptly to the other side of the corridor as her back hastily hit the steel wall, creating a huge hole in the wall. Totally weaken; she didn’t have energy to stand up due the impact. Hearing Tiffany’s steps getting louder, she raised her head slowly and smiled wryly as she muttered:  
  
“Finish me… already… come on \*cough\* do it.”  
  
After cough some blood, Narsha lowered her head and waited for her fate… which it never came… Looking to upwards again, she watched Tiffany looked at her pitifully as she shook head and utters:  
  
“I am not a murder… still… I thank you for making realize that I could be able to be stronger…”  
  
Narsha chuckles inwardly seeing that Tiffany realized her true intentions, she never intended to kill her in first place or vice-versa. After coughing an amount of blood, the red liquid dripped from her lips; grunting slightly, she hesitantly grabbed a cardkey in her pocket and showed to Tiffany. The latter creased her eyebrows in confusion and walked to the defeated Narsha as she crouched in front of her. Narsha raised her wavering hand and placed the card in Tiffany’s palm as she whispers weakly:  
  
“She is down the hall \*cough\* with this card… you will be able to set her free…”  
  
A surprised Tiffany pursued her lips and nodded as she stared at Narsha worriedly and asks:  
  
“Why are you doing this? This won’t put your life in danger?” Narsha chuckles weakly and answer:  
  
“I made a lot… of mistakes in my life… I think its time… to make something good… besides…”  
  
Narsha smiled faintly as she looked at Tiffany worried eyes:  
  
“Jesse is a good boy… the first that one that I met in this tournament… he is unique… don’t lose him… ok?”  
  
Tiffany’s semblance softened as she nodded in agreement and reached the card:  
  
“I won’t.”  
  
“Now… go, quickly! You don’t have much… time.”  
  
Nodding in response, Tiffany quickly stood up and rushed down the corridor. Yet, she stopped and quickly turns around to answer:  
  
“Thank--- you…”  
  
Her words died on her lips when she turns around and… the corridor was empty letting her confused. Then, looking to the keycard, a sincere smile crept in her lips as she whispered to the air:  
  
“Thank you, Narsha.”  
  
With that, she looked to forward and rushed to Jessi’s mom cell. Now, in front the secured steel door, Tiffany didn’t think twice to pass the card and open the door abruptly. She quickly looks to her surroundings and sighs in relief to see that she was alone. Then, entering in the ‘fancy cell’, she creased her eyes in confusion as she scanned the room. Deciding go further, she calls for her lover’s mother:  
  
“Ms. Jung? Ms. Jung, are you there? I came here to help.”  
  
However, only the silence remains; not giving up, she looked around the room and frowned worriedly when she heard some whimpers and mumbles. It was when behind the bed, she found Jesse’s mom curled in a ball form crying continually. Although she saw this woman for the first time, her heart moved in compassion with her pitiful figure. Kneeling aside Jessi’s mom, Tiffany placed her hand on her left shoulder and whispered carefully as her semblance softened:  
  
“Miss Jung? I am Tiffany… Jessi send me here to rescue you.”  
  
The woman ceased her tears for a moment and slowly lifted her head to look at Tiffany’s face. Once their eyes met, her eyes quickly caught a sight of her medallion around Tiffany’s neck; sniffing loudly, she gripped Tiffany’s clothes and asked into a pleading tone:  
  
“My son? Is he safe?!”  
  
Tiffany smiled a little and grabbed the woman’s hand and gave a light squeeze as she adds confidently:  
  
“Yes, Miss Jung. Our friends are helping us to run away from this mansion in safety.”  
  
Still worried, Ms Jung asks: “Where is he now?” Tiffany sighs heavily; feeling worried as well and explains:  
  
“He went after Mr. D… he wanted to make sure that he wouldn’t escape this time.”  
  
Widening her eyes in fear, Ms Jung shook her head and whimpered in despair:  
  
“But-but he can’t! Dorian is insane! He might hurt him… I – I have to do something!”  
  
Tiffany quickly held Ms. Jung shoulders and warned gently:  
  
“Miss Jung… I promised to him that I would get you out of here and I’ll keep my word. Please, accompany me until we can find our friends to run away safely.”  
  
She sighs deeply and breathes in as she stared again, staring at Ms. Jung eyes seriously:  
  
“I know you are very worried about Jessi… so do I… but just like you… I love him very much to let him alone… After bring you to a safe place, I will go after him… you have my word.”  
  
Touched by the younger girl words, Ms. Jung weakly smiled as she nodded feeling more calm. Tiffany helped her to stand up and together they marched to their friend’s encounter. Meanwhile, Ms. Jung couldn’t help to confess to Tiffany, who was aiding her to walk:  
  
“My son is very lucky to have someone like you… Tiffany.”  
  
Tiffany stopped for a second and shook her head as she looked to Ms. Jung eyes deeply. Her semblance lightened as her eyes shone when she smiled genuinely:  
  
“No… I should be the one to thank him. He always was there for me and caring about me. He loved me first…I will never be able to return everything he done, but… I want to pass the rest of my life… loving him much more than I did yesterday.”  
  
Both ladies smiled to each other and together, the rushed out of the prison complex. In one thing Miss Jung had sure… Tiffany was perfect for Jessi and her love for him was real.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
At the other side of the Mr. D hiding-place, Jess had to deal with some thugs on the way, actually this wasn’t a big problem since he maintain his crucial objective… which was find Han and finish him off. Yet, when Jesse finally arrived in a large laboratory center, he widened his eyes in shock to see the defeated fighters inside some kind of tube with a purple liquid. He was terrified in how far D was able to continue with his madness… Before deal with him, he had to help these people for sure. So reaching his phone in his pocket, he quickly dialed to HeeChul and told him to rescue those fighters.  
  
Taeyeon, Sooyoung, Siwon and him didn’t had much problem with deal with thugs since after they set free the prisoners and their ‘army’ was getting bigger. Nonetheless, Jesse couldn’t stay with his arms crossed while he watched D run away. So taking a deep breath, he made his mind and decided to pursuit him. Once he found himself inside another complex in the laboratory, not very far from him it was D. running with his bodyguards along. Seeing how coward he was, Jesse gritted his teeth enraged as he defied him:  
  
“Stop right there and face me, you damn coward!”  
  
Out of sudden, Mr. D stopped his tracks and turned around rapidly as he mocked a laugh with Jessi determined expression. So, he placed his essence on his pocket and clapped his hands in scorn while a creepy smile shows up in his lips:  
  
“Oh, bravo! Did you made this far by yourself? Hmmm you amused me, little Jesse…”  
  
This made Jess grit his teeth even more as he jumped from a high platform and stood a few meters away from D. Not holding himself, he snapped in deep anger:  
  
“Shut up! Let’s settle this already! You are not going to run away from me this time! You gonna pay for everything you done, b@st@rd!”   
  
Mr. D mocked another laugh and scoffed at Jessi’s threats; once he stopped he smiled deviously and snapped coldly to his bodyguards:  
  
“Kill him!”  
  
A group of 15 thugs charged angrily against Jesse; the latter waited patiently as he closed his fists tight in fury while keeping his death glare on Mr. D. However, when the thugs were about to hit him, Jesse managed to dodge and counter attack without any kind of difficulty. He gave swift kicks and punches at the thugs’ nape neck which made them fall unconscious right away. His anger was only a mere boost to reach his real point…  
  
However, after a bunch of unconscious bodies were on the floor, he scoffed as pointed angrily to Mr. D:  
  
“Now it’s you and me. No one it’s going to save you this time, Han!”  
  
Mr. D laughed wickedly this time as he removed the essence from his pocket and placed inside of a long syringe. He glared back to Jesse and smiled maliciously, the latter widened his eyes in shock and stepped forward trying to hinder the tyrant. However, the latter held the syringe right before his heart and yelled with voice filled with madness:  
  
“I guess you will be the one… who will need to be saved. Hahahahahahahaaaaa!!!”  
  
“No!”  
  
It was too late; Mr. D thrusts the syringe with the essence right in his heart and let the liquid flow in his body. Feeling his whole system trying to adapt to the foreign substance, his body trembled in result as the syringe fell from his hand. He placed his both hands on his head trying to hold the pain, but the liquid was like burning his body from inside out:  
  
“Argghhhhhhhh!!!”  
  
However, when he was wriggling and struggling to keep on foot, his knees gave in as he widened his eyes and fell on the floor flatly. After recover from his shock, Jesse frowned suspiciously as he carefully walked to the ‘unconscious body’ on the ground, he inspected Mr. D and realized that the latter wasn’t even breathing… it was it? Everything finally ended it? It was very easy to think about it. When Jesse was about to assure himself, he widened his eyes in shock and stepped to backwards when Mr. D opened his eyes abruptly and his iris were in a crimson color and his pupils were dilated. He stood up in one move and his semblance was completely changed into something more… devilish.  
  
Once his eyes met Jesse, he smiled wickedly clearly exposing his sharp canines. Jesse was astounded since Mr. D was monstrously muscled and veins were completely exposed all over his body, like if it was pumping hard his fresh blood. Mr. D cracked his neck nonchalantly and looked to himself in awe with his ‘brand new body’; then, looking back at Jesse, he grinned devilishly and cocked his head to forward, speaking defiantly:  
  
“Now… let’s see what are you made off… Show me what you got… Jung.”  
  
After grit his teeth angrily once again, Jesse felt inflamed with fury as he hastily lunged himself to forward, ready to punch him down:  
  
“SHUT UP, B@ST@RD!!!”  
  
When Jesse’s fist was about to reach Mr. D deformed face, the latter scoffed and dodged with an incredible speed. Jess gasped in shock to see how much his enemy was fast, like a speed that he never saw before. Not giving up, he yelled angrily again after recover from his last attack and started to give multiples attacks hoping that one of them could create damage in D. However, even with his full speed, Jesse wasn’t able to give a scratch on D’s face, and the worst it was since he wasn’t fully recovered; the fatigue was consuming his body rapidly.  
  
Nonetheless, seeing Jesse struggle to hit him so desperately, Han scorned and shook his head while he kept avoiding the attacks:  
  
“Tsk… this is the best you can do? What a deception… I was expecting more from you, little Jesse…”  
  
Feeling even more furious with his mocking, Jesse grunted and yelled fiercely as he surprised D with a hard punch in his cheek:  
  
“YAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!”  
  
Mr. D’s head tilted to the side due the impact; then, he quickly placing his hand on his cheek, he narrowed his eyes when he saw a small amount of blood in his fingertips due a small cut in his skin. Glaring back at Jesse, out of sudden, a sinister smile crept in his lips as he widened his eyes like a maniac, yelling:  
  
“Let’s do the real thing…shall we?”  
  
Before Jesse could react, Mr. D simply vanished in the air and arisen before him as he gave a powerful punch in Jesse’s stomach. He smiled when watched the brown haired guy gasp in shock and cough violently a huge amount of blood. Using this as an advantage, he roughly grabbed Jesse’s by his hair and made him face him as another devilish grin aroused in his face:  
  
“Ahhh… How much I have been waiting for this moment…”  
  
Closing his hand into a tight fist, he shoved multiples punches in Jesse’s face. Due his scaring strength, the younger boy had his face completely wounded with cuts, black eyes, hematomas all over his face; the blood flowed like a river trough his mouth. The latter tried to avoid the attacks, but his body was giving in due the fatigue and he felt like his bones were about to break anytime due the hard attacks. After being completely beaten, Mr. D laughed loudly as he grabbed Jesse’s by his collar and created a dark energy in his palms to hit Jesse’s chest dangerously. The latter was hastily thrown against the sturdy steel walls making his back hit first creating a loud crashing sound, even Jess’s shirt was completely destroyed due the strong attack. He watched a shirtless Jesse on his knees, trying to stand up after spit another huge amount of blood. So, walking to him saucily, Mr. D snapped cockily while approaching from Jesse:  
  
“Well well well… looks like someone isn’t that strong huh? What a shame, Jesse… after all this time, you still can’t beat me…weak as always! Hahahahahaha!”  
  
Jesse grunted faintly as he was trying to join his strengths to stand up, but it was hard… his body was seriously damaged. He couldn’t even open his right eye due the hard punch he received earlier, blood was dripping from his lips and he had to hold his left rib since he was completely sure that it was broken, at least two or three of them. However, after a lot of effort, he stands up and breathes heavily; yet, Mr. D managed to rush to him in an amazing speed and pinned him against the wall, strangling him neck. Jesse was losing his breath bit a bit when he heard another round of a sinister laughter, followed by a harsh whisper:  
  
“Do you really think you can beat me HUH?! You are just a wimp as your father. You had all the chances to be stronger… but because of your stupidity to be the hero… this will cost your life, you useless!”   
  
Jesse hissed painfully and closed his eyes tightly as he whispered weakly:  
  
“You … are insane…I would never… use people to make me pow-powerful, I only need… the ones I – I love t-to make me stronger… what you are doing… only shows how pathetic and… weak you ar-are.”  
  
“Arghhhhh!!! Still cocky huh?! Let’s see about that!”  
  
With his ego hurt with Jesse’s words, Mr. D grabbed Jesse’s body and throws on the air as he quickly disappeared and gave at a swift kick in his back, making Jesse hit the floor instantaneously. The latter didn’t have energy to fight anymore, every time he tried to counter attack his opponent, the latter would be faster and stronger than him, still he refused to give in knowing that his mom and Tiffany were counting with him.  
  
…  
  
Meanwhile, after accompany Jess’ mom safely to her friends, Tiffany ran all the way back to the prison and finally to laboratory. Although her friends told her to get out of the mansion, she refused leave without Jessi. So running and panting trough the long aisles, she held the medallion close to her heart and prayed:  
  
*“Please… hold on, Jessi. I am coming!”*  
  
After leave the prison’s complex, she passed by a huge hangar and a laboratory. Yet, she was surprised to see a lot of unconscious thugs sprawled on the floor. She chewed her lips nervously and whispered as she looked to a huge door before her:  
  
*“Jessi must be there…”*  
  
Taking a deep breath, she sprinted to the door and opened quickly to realize that now, she was inside of another complex of the laboratory. She gasped in surprise, the whole place was a mess… it looks like a hurricane passed here. However, she didn’t even have to look around when right before her; a sinister muscled man was smiling maliciously. She widened her eyes in shock and whispered:  
  
“Is this Mr. D?! Oh my God…”  
  
Yet, when her eyes followed the evil man’s glare, she gasped in shock and widened her eyes even more to see her beloved totally beaten and wounded on the ground. With her heart aching due the sight, she couldn’t help to feel surprised when Jesse, even completely hurt and soiled, get up slowly as he glared Mr. D and snapped faltering:  
  
“I-I will fight until my last breath! … I won’t g-give up!”  
  
Mr. D grunted angrily and snapped before charge against the wounded Jessi:  
  
“Enough of you! I will smash you now! Prepare yourself!”  
  
Unable to stay there watching anymore, filled with a great courage, Tiffany took a deep breath and jumped from the platform already throwing countless fireballs against the tyrant, creating an explosion before their eyes. She managed to land in front of Jesse who was astounded with wide eyes to see her before him. A huge smoke formed in the stop where D was standing and Tiffany managed to yell angrily:  
  
“If you laid one finger on him again… You will get from me, you sick!”  
  
“Tiffany! What are you doing here?! It’s dangerous! \*cough cough\* Run away!!!”  
  
She quickly turns around and placed her arm around his waist while holding his arm. Looking at him tenderly, she whispered in concern to see him all bruised:  
  
“How can you say that? I can’t and I won’t leave here! You save me before… it’s time to do the same.”  
  
Convinced that her attack was able to knock D out, until she felt a sudden shiver in her spine when the smoke vanished abruptly and a sound of clapping hands filled the air. The couple rapidly turns around in shock to see D unaffected and grinning maliciously to them as he mocked an amused tone:  
  
“Awww what a beautiful moment…little Jesse didn’t managed to fight against me by himself and had to send his brave girlfriend to did the rest… so touching.”  
  
“My fireballs… didn’t even make a scratch on him…”  
  
Tiffany whispered in shock, still holding Jesse; however, Mr. D semblance darkened once again as he gritted his teeth madly:  
  
“Now… neither one of you will leave this place… this will be your grave!”  
  
When he was about to launch himself against the couple, Jesse widened his eyes and instinctively released himself from Tiffany’s grip and stood before her protectively as he whispers desperately:  
  
“Tiffany! Get out of here N.O.W!”  
  
Before she could speak, she felt a sudden pain in her neck and saw Jesse falling on the floor. Yes, in a slipt of second, Mr. D managed to catch them both at the same time; he kicked Jesse hard on his stomach and stepped atop his ribs as he laughed like a maniac while holding Tiffany’s neck, who was hanging on the air:  
  
“Hahahaha!”  
  
When Jesse even tried to set himself free, Mr. D managed to create a sharp and a long blade with his right arm. Without think twice, he thrusts the sharp object (like a sickle) and perforates Jesse’s right shoulder. The later yells in pain as the blade pass through in his flesh. Tiffany widened her eyes in shock, feeling her heart halting in pain to see Jesse’s suffering, she struggled to set free from D’s death grip, but it was too strong for her… so she helplessly watched him stepping on Jesse making the latter cough more blood. Even fighting to breathe, Tiffany let a cry out as she burst in tears, sobbing and despaired to save her beloved:  
  
“LET HIM GO, YOU B@ST@RD! He already suffered a lot! Pl-please, I beg you! Le-let him go! Do-don’t hurt him anymore! Please!”  
  
This makes Mr. D laugh even more loudly as he shook his head and snapped to Jessi into a cocky tone:  
  
“Great choice, little Jesse! She is feisty and very courageous, much more than you! Hahahahaha such a pity that I will have to finish you two now!”  
  
Even trying hard to speak, Jess felt tears accumulating in his eyes as he whispered after a lot of effort even with a unbearable pain:  
  
“Pl-please… it’s m-me who y-you want… do wha-whatever you want with me… but do-don’t hurt her… just let her go!”  
  
“Tsk tsk tsk, sorry but I can’t! I can’t separate the lovebirds, can I? Hmmm let me see… should I kill you first and make her watch? Or should I kill her in front of you and make you watch everything?”  
  
He stopped for a moment and a malicious smile crept in his lips as he uttered devilishly:  
  
“Hmm I said that it will be better if I kill her right now in front of you. Ahhh it will be amazing to watch you unable to do anything to save your girl… hahahahahahahaha!”  
  
“NOOOOOOOO!!!”  
  
Jesse shouted with his wide eyes in despair and felt his heart stop when Mr. D started laughed like a maniac again as he tightened the grip around Tiffany’s neck. The latter kept struggling to take his hand off, but when her air was dissipating… her strength was fading away as well. Even seeing her death right before her eyes, tearing up, she looked at Jesse and whispered with her tender eyes:  
  
*“I – I love you.”*   
  
When Mr. D was about to give a last squeeze in her neck, almost making her wilt, Jesse felt his blood boil like he never felt before. Something awoken inside of him, like a beast ready to be unleashed… and he did it… with his heart beating fast in adrenaline to save his beloved, a sudden energy consumed his entire body at the point he didn’t felt any pain, just rage… Panting heavily like a wild animal, he felt his body tremble as he gritted his teeth into a blindly fury. While watching Mr. D laughing of their torture, Jesse closed his hands in tight fists so hard that blood came out from his palms. Feeling anger infinity greater when he fought against G- Dragon… he went to a full berserk… finally.  
  
“YARGHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!”  
  
Both of them, D and Tiffany widened their eyes in shock due the war cry coming from Jesse’s lips. Using this chance of a stunned D, Jesse felt his blood pumping hard inside his now, rigid and strong muscles with his veins pumping hard under his skin. His eyes were scintillating blue, his ears were pointy and his hair changed into a grey color. A transformed and much stronger Jesse glared loathingly at D, before the latter could act, the transformed guy abruptly removed D’s blade from his shoulder and broke it effortlessly. The tyrant yelled into an unbearable pain since the weapon actually was his right arm; in reaction, he loosened the grip of Tiffany’s neck as the latter was about to reach the floor flatly. In the last second, Jesse managed to grab her in mid-air as he held safely and uttered into a serious voice:  
  
“Hide yourself. I will finish this b@st@rd once for all.”  
  
Tiffany was stunned while she looked at her transformed boyfriend; his eyes were empty and full of anger; his semblance was covered with hate. She knew that Jessi wouldn’t hesitate to kill D and even if she tried, she couldn’t stop him this time. Still, feeling safer with him around, he jumped to a high platform and gingerly placed Tiffany into a safe place. He looked at her for a moment with his blue and piercing eyes and suddenly, he jumped off to start his duel with Dorian. The latter was holding his broken arm as his shouts filled the air, however when he realized eyes glaring him, he widened his eyes when he saw Jesse panting heavily with a violent aura around him. Before he could speak, Jesse spoke coldly, with his voice filled with fury:  
  
“It’s payback time, you wretch!”  
  
“Damn…”  
  
It was everything D managed to say as out of sudden, Jessi appeared behind him, before he could react, the transformed guy gave a hard kick in his back making him fly violently against the wall. D shook his head feeling dizzy; it was when he was pinned against the wall, he gasped in shock when Jesse’s arms were covered by ice. Soon, not holding himself anymore, Jesse shouted and started to pin him on the wall with his multiples punches and creating an huge crater on the wall due his strong attacks:  
  
“My turn!!!”  
  
Dorian felt like his bones ready to break in any moment and definitely, he knew that he was bleeding from inside out. Despaired, he knew that Jesse would kill him, so trying to use his last resource; he used his free arm to push Jesse violently from him as blood dripped from his nose and mouth. When he was about to use this chance to attack Jesse, he felt his knees giving in; feeling deadly worried, he looked to his arms and hands and gasped in fear once he realized his situation:  
  
*“Cr@p! The essence’s effect it’s dissipating! If he realizes this I am finished! Think, quickly!”*  
  
He rapidly looked to his surroundings and saw his last chance to save himself… in that case, use Tiffany’s girl as his guarantee and humam shield. When he was about to launch himself against the platform, he gasped in fear when he was violently pushed by his leg and thrown against a sturdy pillar, followed by disdainful tone:  
  
“Where do you think you are going?!”  
  
In a snap of second, Jesse charged against D and jumped highly on the air, disappearing from D’s sight. Out of sudden, he appears from above and roughly landed atop D’s body. He used right hand to create a sharp ice stake and perforated D’s wounded arm. The latter screamed in pain as Jesse whispered harshly and his eyes shining in revenge:  
  
“Now that you vaccine won’t work anymore… you won’t run away from me, Han!”  
  
“Arghhhhhhhhhhh!!!”  
  
Han yelled again as Jesse deepened the stake in his shoulder; listening his cries it was like music to his ears. However out of sudden an unexpected fact happens… even before the death, Han looked at Jesse’s eyes and used his strength to laugh like a maniac as he grunted and his body getting to the original form:  
  
“Hahaha… \*cough\* cough\* wha-t a-are you waiting for?! Come on and k-kill me! Y-you will be so dirty and despicable than me hahahahaha!!!”  
  
Angry, Jesse shook Dorian and snapped angrily: “Shut up!” Han used this moment of weakness as he said in disdain and smiling slyly:  
  
“You are weak as your father… that’s why I ki-killed him… he always wanted… to use his power for the g-good and end up defeated…I even took you-your precious mother away from you all time… and almost killed y-your girlfriend, so what are you waiting for?! You don’t have g-guts to face me!”  
  
With the rage running wildly in his body, Jesse was deeply tempted to rip D’s head off from his body. When he created another ice stake ready to thrust on D’s heart, he heard a loud booming voice, calling desperately:  
  
“Jessi! Don’t!”  
  
Jesse ceased his attacks briefly, yet he felt an irresistible bloodlust to kill D right now. As much he tried to hinder his move, something inside of him was pushing to go further and kill the damn b@st@rd. However, once again, he listen the desperate cry:  
  
“Jessi, wait! Don’t do this! I know you have all reasons to kill him, but think! This will only make you exactly in what he is! This won’t bring your father back! Please, don’t stain your hands! He isn’t worthy of that!!!”  
  
Looking back to the tyrant, Jesse hissed angrily when D had the audacity to laugh on Jess’s hesitant form:  
  
“Hahaha see? You are weak! You don’t even have courage to kill me! Hahahaha \*cough cough\*”  
  
Even scoffing and coughing blood, D kept laughing in disdain as he kept tantalizing Jesse, grunting and ordering: “Kill me! Kill me, you wimp!” Meanwhile, Tiffany shook her head, fearing that her loved one could go further, she yells trying to stop him:  
  
“Remember everything you said, Jessi! You are not murder! You have a good and kind heart! That’s why I fell in love with you! Please, don’t let his sick confuse your head! Please, listen to me!”  
  
His mind was divided; he kept exchanging stares between Tiffany despaired form and… the defeated and the mocking D. With a piercing headache, he felt his hand working by it on as kept burring the ice stake on D’s shoulder, making the latter let a loud cry in pain. Jesse could get used to see this tyrant suffering; even after all he already done; death still was too good for him. Feeling his blood burning and millions of voices screaming at him, telling him to kill D already… it was Tiffany’s soft voice which he heard in the middle of the crowd inside of his mind. Seeing her begging eyes, his hand started to tremble under his control. Battling with himself, his headache only gets worse…  
  
Nevertheless, after grunt loudly in pain, he screamed into his mind to cease the unwelcoming voices. Tiffany’s voice repeated in his head, so when he stared her deeply… he knew what was right to do… even that this tyrant deserved to be tortured and killed with a painful death… this doesn’t compete to him to judge. Once he finally understood, he took a deep breath and hastily removed the ice stake from D while gaining a grunt in pain and shocked look from the latter. Tiffany’s eyes softened as she sighs in relief with Jesse’s action; when Han was about to tantalize him once again, Jess roughly reached his collar and muttered deep angrily as he faced D:  
  
“I am not you… I am not a murderer… I will let God judge you… but if you come any closer of my family, friends or Tiffany again… I won’t hesitate to destroy you once for all!”  
  
Roughly throwing him on the floor, Jesse started to get up slowly, yet D snorted and when he was about to start: “Hey you! I didn’t finish with you! Come back here you---!!!” Jesse didn’t even let him finish his words as he abruptly turns around and gave a violent punch right in his face, knocking him out at the same instant. He gritted his teeth and muttered still in rage:  
  
“Stay on the floor where you belong.”  
  
After look at D’s form for some moments, Jesse sighs in relief when he realized that the tyrant wasn’t going to get up any time soon. However, once he turns around to find his beloved; the latter was looking at him in awe and smiling blissfully. She didn’t even think twice to stood up and run to his encounter. A relief smile crept in his lips as he extends his left arm for her, waiting her to hug him; she felt her racing again as she calls caringly:  
  
“Jess!”  
  
In a few seconds, she thrown herself in his neck and embraced him really tight, not even caring about the fact his body was drenched in sweat and with some bruises. He closed his eyes in glee to have his beloved safely in his arms again as he whispered fondly while caressing her hair:  
  
“I am so sorry, Fany. I – I barely could control myself… if it wasn’t for you, I – I…”  
  
“Shhh… I was worried too at first, but… I’m glad that you listened to me, Jess.”  
  
He broke the hug as he looked deeply in her eyes and she was surprised to see that those same piercing sparkling blue eyes started to turn back on his hazel and warm ones as his body turned to the original form. Unable to control herself, she caressed his face gently, precisely at his wounds as he wrapped his arms around her waist gently and whispered softly:  
  
“Even dwelling in confusion… my heart would still hear your voice between the crowds. Thank you for showing me the way… my love.”  
  
Tiffany blushed at his words as her cheeks started to heat up. When they were about to lean in, they were surprised when they heard many small explosions, like if the place was crumbling down. Yet, they gasped in shock when they heard the robotic female voice:  
  
***“Self destruction system – activated. Starting the countdown in 5 minutes…”***  
  
“What?!” Before they could react, they heard that same maniac laughter as they turned around and saw the culprit holding a remote control:  
  
“Big mistake, little Jesse! You should have killed me! Now both of you are going to die hahahaha! And I am out of here ahahahahaha!”  
  
It was what D said as he hastily turns around to reach the emergency exit, in that case a individual elevator which would guide him to a safe place. Listening Tiffany’s voice in despair, Jess didn’t think twice as he created an ice ball in his hand and hastily throws in D’s direction:  
  
“No, you don’t!”  
  
Once the ice burst touched D’s legs, it froze him at the same second, so he couldn’t even move from his spot. He glared in anger at Jesse as he yelled furiously:  
  
“Arghhh! Damn you! Get me out of here!”  
  
Jesse ignored him as he quickly reached Tiffany’s hand and held tight while running to the elevator. After dodge from some wreckage on fire, they managed to reach the transporter. Yet, the big problem it was that their time was ending and the elevator only have one vacancy. Even if they tried to make to return to get the other one, the time wouldn’t allow it… Realizing the delicate situation, Jesse took a deep breath and made his choice. So he grabbed Tiffany by her shoulders and spoke carefully while looking in her worried eyes:  
  
“Tiffany… you need to enter on the elevator.”  
  
She widened her eyes and looked at him incredulously as she snapped back:  
  
“What?! No! I won’t run away and leave you behind!”  
  
She sputtered those words as tears already were filling up her eyes; Jesse shook her shoulders while she tried to get out of his grip. He took a deep breath, trying to convince her, but the loud robotic voice wasn’t helping very much:  
  
***“3 minutes to activate the self destruction system.”***  
  
“You don’t have choice! I want you enter on this elevator N.O.W!”  
  
“NO! I LOST YOU ONCE AND I DON’T WANT TO LOSE YOU AGAIN!”  
  
Tiffany shouted as tears rolled by her eyes like a river; she was even sobbing loudly as she kept mumbling to Jesse:  
  
“Please… I can’t leave you.”  
  
Sighing softly, Jesse managed to stay calm as he tenderly lifted her chin and wiped her tears gingerly with his thumb:  
  
“Remember what I told you in that time on the waterfall?” He managed to place her head in his chest to calm her sobs as he whispered gently, recalling their moment:  
  
“I told you that… I will always be here for you, to protect and loving you as I always will bring you in my heart…”  
  
Tiffany kept crying as Jesse caressed her back gently. When they broke the hug, he caressed her wounded cheek so carefully as he whispers softly, with his eyes glowing in true love:  
  
“I couldn’t ever feel so blessed when you crossed my way… I never experienced love before… still, my heart was yours since the beginning…It doesn’t matter wherever I am… I will always love you, always. Tiffany, I – I love you so much… more than any word in this world could describe…”  
  
She chocked in tears feeling touched with his sincere words. So acting quickly, she touched her forehead with his and wrapped her arms around her neck as one of her hand placed on his heart:  
  
“I love you too so much, but p-please… I beg you, don’t l-leave me. Don’t ask me this coz I won’t do it!”  
  
He smiled bitterly and cupped her cheeks lovingly as he finally closed his eyes and leaned to capture her moistened lips. She felt her aching heart beating unsteadily as she tilted her head to the side, letting Jesse deepens the lovingly kiss. As much this kiss was filled with love, passion, care and true feelings…Tiffany felt a pang in her heart as if this was like a ‘goodbye kiss’; no, she doesn’t want to believe that this was a goodbye… she can’t lose him, she needed Jesse and love him for the rest of her life.  
  
However, Jessi wrapped his arm tight around her into a passionate and lovingly embrace as he kissed her with the most care and love. Tears rolled by his eyes since he knew that this will be the last time he kissed those lips, the last time that he will see her smile or her melting eyes; and the last time he could say that he loved her and hold her in his arms. It was hard; rather it was unbearable the thought to leave his first and only love. But, this was for the best, while deepening the embrace, making her feel comfortable and loved in his arms, he enveloped her lower lips with his lips as he kissed her so gently, since to his eyes, so fragile.  
  
***“1 minute to activate the self destruct system.”***  
  
That time, Jesse reluctantly broke the kiss, still feeling the taste of her lips lingering on his own. He squeezed her tight in his arms and out of sudden, they looked to each other and he whispered lovingly:  
  
“I love you. Tell my mother that I love her too.”  
  
Before Tiffany could say a word, Jesse swiftly managed to push the elevator button and pushed her to inside as he quickly closed to door while pressing the button. The elevator had a window that he could see Tiffany’s desperate face as she punched the thick glass while screaming and sobbing:  
  
“JESS, OPEN THIS DOOR! DON’T DO THIS! PLEASE, DON’T DO THIS, JESS! NOOOO!!!”  
  
Tears rolled by his eyes as he smiled for the last time and mouthed to her again: *“I love you.”* With that, he finally pushed another button and the elevator turn on as in a speed of light, disappeared from his sight while he could imagine that Tiffany would it be screaming from the top of her lungs to get back on him. This has to be done, he wouldn’t think twice to protect and sacrifice himself for the one he loved. Taking a deep breath, he looked back to the elevator button and gave a strong punch, breaking the elevator’s control. After his sudden move, he heard a despaired shout coming from the frozen D:  
  
“You stupid! You destroyed the only chance to escape! Now, neither one of us can get out of here!”  
  
Jesse looked at him and smiled bitterly as he whispered sincerely while putting his hand on his heart:  
  
“She is safe… that it’s all that matters for me.”  
  
“30 seconds to activate the self destruction system…”  
  
Letting his tears roll by his eyes, Jesse closed his eyelids and muttered soflty with his hand still in his heart:  
  
*“I love you wherever I am… Tiffany…”*  
  
…  
  
After the elevator reached a safe location, the doors opened abruptly as Tiffany was ejected from the transporter. Once she realized where she was, in that case, at the Duel Arena; she gasped in shock to see all her friends waiting for their return. Thinking quickly, she saw that Jesse didn’t came back, so terrified and despaired, Tiffany cried out as she sprinted at the elevator’s direction. However, she tried to open the door, but the screen showed that the control has been deactivated. She cursed and punched the steel doors while bitter tears rolled by her eyes:  
  
“Damn it, Jesse! Open this door! Pl...please!”  
  
Seeing that the door didn’t even moved, she completely ignored the presence of her friends as she could see the D Mansion where she was standing and yelled:  
  
“Jesse, I am coming back for you!”  
  
“Tiffany, you can’t! It’s dangerous! That whole place it’s crumbling down!” HeeChul seized her from her back as she started to flail herself recklessly from his grip. Realizing that he was strong, she screamed of the top of her lungs while tears were flying from her swollen eyes:  
  
“You don’t understand! He needs me! That place it’s going to blow! LET ME GO! I – I !!!”  
  
\*BOOMMMMMMMMM!!!\*  
  
Tiffany widened her eyes and her heart stopped when she heard and saw the booming explosion. Everyone gasped in shock to see a huge cloud of smoke coming from the destroyed mansion. HeeChul widened his eyes as well as he slowly loosened the grip from Tiffany’s back after realize that the girl was motionless. Tiffany’s eyes glued on the grey smoke as her lips were trembled, no; her whole body was trembling due the sight. Her heart shattered into million pieces and it was like it dropped from her chest…yes, under her ribs there was a big hole of a dead heart.  
  
Unconsciously, tears rolled by her eyes while she stared the smoke motionlessly since she still was in shock. She could listen her friends already crying and whimpering at her side; once she finally realized that everything was finished. A sharp and unbearable pain pierced her being as not able to hold herself anymore; she let a desperate cry out:  
  
“JESSEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE!!! NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”  
  
Finally let it out, her legs gave in as she fell on the floor on her knees. Tears rolled by her eyes like a river; still, she refused to accept her crushing fate. Trying to stand up quickly, she tried to run to the destroyed mansion as she screamed with a broken heart:  
  
“YOU PRO-PROMISED TH-THAT YOU WOULD BE ALWAYS THERE FOR ME!!! WHY DID YOU HAVE TO DO THIS! WHY YOU DID THAT?! YOU PROM-MISED THAT YOU WOULDN’T LEAVE MY SIDE!”  
  
With unstoppable sobs, cries and chocking in her tears, Tiffany didn’t have strength to go further; the pain was too much to bear. Still, she kept going to the mansion as someone suddenly holds her arm. She started to flail herself, crying desperately as HeeChul uttered with sorrow:  
  
“Tiffany… *h-he is gone*…”  
  
His words were more crushing that the explosion by itself, it was like the information finally sunk in and she realized that she didn’t had chances anymore. A crying Taeyeon and Sooyoung hugged her hoping to comfort her, but no one was able to heal the hole of her heart, the only it could, it wasn’t here anymore… Still looking at the explosion with dead eyes, she knew that her heart died on that same time once she knew that Jesse was gone. Tiffany felt everything fade away as her sight started to get darken. Feeling dizzy from all stress, exhaustion, depression and blindly heartache, she kept crying hopelessly until she finally gave in, whispering and sobbing his name from her dry lips after realize that she lost her main pillar… her true loved one:  
  
***“J-Jessi…”***

**TBC**

**Final Chapter (Part 1)**  
  
  
  
*“It has been four days since I was in his arms, four days that we kissed for the last time, four days that we promise our love…and four days that he took my heart with him…”*  
  
These were the train of thoughts which were running by Tiffany’s mind. Right now, she finds herself inside a hospital’s room in JeJu’s Island. Her superficial wounds already were healed, yet… no medicine was able to heal the pain of her lifeless heart. Staring the window with a lost and distant look, Tiffany blinked slowly as fresh tears rolled by her cheeks.  
  
Ever since she was brought to this hospital, she only was able to wake up two days ago… Only to break up in tears when she didn’t saw Jesse right her side as her mind brought the past events about the mansion, the fight, Mr. D and the explosion; although the JeJu’s authorities and staffs were making a rescue team, they never were able to find her dear Jessi. As much she wanted denied the fact, she knew that once that explosion occurred… a part… no… her heart was destroyed as well.  
  
And, well, although she was physically fine, her emotional was seriously damaged and unstable at the point that she would end up crying, sobbing and flailing herself until that the medical’s staff had to apply some tranquilizer in her body. This only worked for some hours, she didn’t know if stay unconscious was better to be awake since once conscious, the pain was insanely worse. Her friends were all worried about her delicate state, they tried to advise and comfort her to make her eat and sleep, still, they would end up sighing deeply in concern and frustration since Tiffany stays motionlessly.  
  
Even her semblance was changed, her eyes weren’t lively and shining anymore, her lips weren’t able to form a smile, her face was more skinner along with her body. She was completely lost and doesn’t matter how hard her friends tried to lift her mood, all of them were unsuccessful; they felt their heart breaking seeing Tiffany crumbling into sadness and depression in every single day.  
  
Back to the girl’s depressing state, whenever she was awake, she would end up crying, sobbing, chocking in her tears as she lamented to herself thinking in what if she was able to do when ‘he’ still was here. And when she ended up crying until sleep, every night, flashes of their fresh and lovingly memories together would end up crushing into her mind. She whimpered unconsciously while dreaming with Jess; recalling of his tender and hazel eyes; his kind heart; his arms around her which always were so amazing to make her feel safe and complete; his kisses which made her heart increase the pace in utter his name in every single beat; and lastly, the immense love he felt for her, making explicit the deepness and purity of his feelings towards her.  
  
Now, in her dream, she found herself in a white and wide space, without any physic barrier; Tiffany kept walking by a long road without destiny. Her eyes look around, but there was she, completely alone; however, once she looked before her, she realized that not very far from her spot, a familiar silhouette was with the back against her. Frowning in confusion, she quickens the pace as the silhouette was becoming clear. Once her eyes realized who the person was, her heart increased the pace as her breathing started to get heavier. Like if the person was feeling her eyes in the back, the not so strange invidious, turn around with a smile in the face and Tiffany gasped in shock. Already tearing up, she finally was able to see the one who she longed all this time:  
  
“JESSIIII!!!!”  
  
His name escaped from her lips faster than she could think; her beloved only smiled tenderly as he always did and spreads his arms widely while waiting for her embrace. And it did, she didn’t think twice to run to his encounter and hug him really tight as she burrows her face on his chest. He smiled warmly again and placed his head on top of hers as she cried hopelessly while he brushed her hair caringly:  
  
“Jess-Jessi… I – I missed y-you so much…Why did you leave me? W-Why?!”  
  
Instead of an answer to her whimpering, he deepened his caresses and embraced her tightly in his arms. The moment was amazing, Tiffany kept crying as he suddenly pulled from the hug and looked to her eyes lovingly. Wiping her tears gently, he smiled again as he finally spoke and held her chin tenderly:  
  
“I never left you and I never will; I promised that I will always be at your side… Right here.”  
  
He said softly as he pointed to her heart, yet she shook her head and tears rolled by her eyes again:  
  
“But I need you! I – I can’t li-live without you… Jess, I – I love you… pl-please don’t leave me!”  
  
Suddenly his expression saddened for a moment, yet, he managed to smile a little as he cupped her cheeks and whispered lovingly:  
  
“I will always love you… more than you can ever imagine…”  
  
However, when they were lost in the other’s eyes, Tiffany saw everything fading away and darkening around them. Feeling terrified and worried, she was shocked to see Jesse disappearing from her hands as well. She tightened the grip, but he was like sand in her hands; tearing up again, she yells in pain while he was vanishing:  
  
“You said that you wouldn’t leave me! You promised!”  
  
Jesse tied to cup her face, yet he looked at her for the last moment as he disappeared entirely. Even when she desperately tried to grasp his hands, she end up grasping the air… after scream his name many times, her knees gave in as she sobbed hard while yelling:  
  
“JESSIII!!! COME BACK! I CAN’T TAKE IT ANYMORE! PL-PLEASE… C-COME BACK…”  
  
\*GASP\*  
  
“COME BACK!”  
  
A flailing Tiffany screamed on her bed as she opened her eyes abruptly and seated. After realize that she was in the same hospital’s room, once again she felt warm tears rolling by her cheeks as she recalled her dream… it looked so real, so real the fact that she was again inside of his embrace. Her dream was a torture, every night she had that same dream and would end up waking up sobbing, crying and calling his name. This night wouldn’t be different, yet, she asked to herself how far she would take it… this was too much for her… for the first time in her whole life, when she was able to find someone who really loved her … and now, it was gone…  
  
Staring the window emotionlessly, she felt the pain of a broken and empty heart all over again. Burrowing her face in her palms, she cried hopelessly as a tremble whisper escaped from her lips:  
  
“Je-ssi…”  
  
Nonetheless, afterwards, she heard the door opening and closing softly, yet she didn’t even made an effort to look around to see the ‘intruder’. Thinking that it could it is Dr. Kim to do a check-up, Tiffany didn’t even move from her spot. She let the tears roll by her eyes as she stared the sky while the gentle wind caressed her dark brown hair. However, she whimpered bitterly still depressed:  
  
“J-Jessi… I – I miss you s-so much…”  
  
She ended her sentence while hugging her knees and kept sobbing…  
…  
…  
…  
  
“I missed you more… my love.”  
  
“!!!”  
  
Tiffany ceased her cries instantaneously as she shot her head up with her eyes wide open.  
  
“Oh my God… it can’t be…or it can?”  
  
It was everything Tiffany could think confusedly as she changed her stare to the voice’s direction. She looked at the ‘intruder’s toe slowly rising her eyes to the person’s face. Once the moonlight exposed the person’s face, she gasped in shock. The not-so-strange guy smiled tenderly as he always did while eying the crying girl. Seeing her heavy eye bags, swollen eyes and her face drenched in tears; he frowned worriedly, touched by her expression. Meanwhile, Tiffany felt her broken heart quicken the pace vigorously as her eyes glued on his face. Her being was completely torn; her heart believed that her beloved was right in front of her, but her brain was telling that she was insane and this could only it is a ghost.  
  
However, if this wasn’t real… why her heart was beating so fast? Why her whole being was filled by a warm feeling? And lastly… her heart always knew when her beloved was around, and she knew that she couldn’t be mistaken. When Jesse kept frowning worriedly due the girl’s stunned semblance, he stepped close to her, aside her bed and whispered gently:  
  
“Don’t cry anymore, honey. I came back … for you. Tiffa--!!!”  
  
“JESSIIIIIIIIIIII!!!”  
  
The latter merely could stay on his foot when Tiffany jumped from the bed to his arms into a really tight embrace. She sobbed loudly and laughed in relief when he returned the tight hug; she burrows her face in his chest and tightened her arms around his waist as she muttered unsteadily:  
  
“A-am I dr-dreaming? It’s you! It’s really you! Please…d-don’t let go.”  
  
Jess sighs in relief as he gingerly rubbed her back and planted his chin above the crown of her head. He kissed her forehead lovingly as he brought her to his warm embrace, making sure that he wouldn’t let her go. Out of sudden, she muttered weakly against his chest letting her teardrops soak into his shirt:  
  
“Is this real? I am afraid if I - I open my eyes now, you will leave me again… I – I –“  
  
“Shhh… look at me, Fany.”  
  
Reluctantly, she complied as she raised her face and opened her eyes slowly. Her sight was blurred due the tears, yet she was able to see his tender eyes very clearly; once their eyes met, Jess wiped her tears carefully and caressed her cheek fondly. Her heart skipped inside her chest while she saw his piercing stare on her eyes; like a magnetic force, he cupped her face caringly and whispered against her lips before close the gap between them:  
  
“I will never let you go again… I love you, Tiffany.”  
  
“Jessi…”  
  
She muttered already closing her eyes as she felt his lips pressing against her tremble ones. All her repressed feelings kicked out due her longing for her lover; no words could describe this moment, everything she ever wanted, it was right here. Their heartbeats increased the beatings as a warm and welcome feeling flooded their bodies. How she missed these lips, even when they were parted only for a few days, she felt like if it was an eternity. Overwhelmed with love and feelings, she wrapped her arms around his neck and deepened their kiss, letting their bodies do the rest.  
  
Jess embraced her tighter as he felt tears rolling by his eyes as well; enveloping her lower plump lip with his own, he tilted his head to the side to kiss her more deeply. She answered with a content sigh and moan as she let herself melt in his arms; nibbling his lips gingerly, their kiss turned into something more passionate, lovingly and desperate at the same time. However, out of sudden, he pulled from her lips as he adorned her face with his delicate kisses, she could only flutter her eyes in delight while feeling his lips all over her skin. Once she brought his face back to her own, she cupped his cheeks, stared at his eyes with love overflowing by her eyes and whispered breathlessly:  
  
“I love you too… so much, Jessi.”  
  
He flashed a warm smile as he pulled her to his arms and nuzzled her hair affectionately. Soon, he carefully placed her on the bed and made his way to her like they always did. She placed her head comfortingly on his left shoulder as he used his swatted right arm to caress her face lovingly. Once again, she felt herself melting and blushing to see his eyes shining due the moonlight only directed to her. Yet, she reached his bandaged arm and gingerly intertwined their hands together, in awe after review how their hands fit perfectly together. Although this was like a real dream, she knew that this time it wasn’t, her beloved was right before her, staring her with his eyes full of love.  
  
After a moment of silence enjoying the other’s presence and warmth, Tiffany brushed his chest caringly as she whispers:  
  
“Jessi?”  
  
“Hmmm?” He hummed gently as he looked down to her and clasped her chin lovingly. Thumbing her skin caringly, he waited for her continue:  
  
“How di-did you found me? I mean I – I… well, nothing matters if you are with me now… but how you-“  
  
“I will always find my way back to you, Fany.”  
  
Her eyes shone with his tender words; yet, he brushed her cheek gingerly as he tilted his head to the side, sighing after recall his past events:  
  
“After I placed you on the elevator… the whole place was crumbling down… and honestly I didn’t think that I was able to escape, yet with only 30 seconds to the mansion explode… A wall was destroyed and I saw a long tube exposed… I didn’t know where it was going to take it, but I had to try… However, in 10 seconds I managed to avoid the fire and the ceiling giving in above me and well, I jumped on the tube… I could hear the explosion and the fire was coming into my direction. When I looked to forward, I could listen familiar sounds and once I realized, I was discharged from to a high spot to the sea and after that everything was a big black out on my mind.”  
  
Tiffany was agape with his explanation, yet she remained silent after Jesse breathes in and continued:  
  
“I didn’t know how, but once I regained conscious, I could listen familiar voices like Taeyeon, Sooyoung and HeeChul talking with the doctors.”  
  
Tiffany widened her eyes in shock and felt a pain in her heart as if she was cheated by her friends. How could they not telling her truth? Feeling anger, she hissed and gritted her teeth; however, Jessi was able to read her action and placed his hand atop of hers as he calmed the furious girl:  
  
“Don’t be mad at them, Fany. It wasn’t their fault.” Tiffany shook her head and muttered wryly:  
  
“How come? Th-they saw my suffering and they knew that you were alive, so why they didn’t tell me?!”  
  
“Fany… they couldn’t tell you the truth. The doctors didn’t allow it.”  
  
Unconsciously, Tiffany creased her eyebrows in confusion and muttered as her semblance was clearly frustrated: “But, why not?”  
  
Jess caressed her face lovingly again as she held his hand on her cheek and closed her eyes to feel his touch. He nibbled his lip and whispered gently with his semblance softening:  
  
“All this time you were recovering yourself, I was into some kind of coma for what I heard from the medics. I could hear them, but as I much tried, I couldn’t move or even open my eyes. I really wanted to get up and find you already, every day I was becoming more despaired to see you. I knew that they didn’t want to tell you that I was here because of my serious condition, honestly I didn’t know if I were going to live, but when I heard from a doctor of your delicate situation and that you weren’t feeding yourself properly and practically, giving up of yourself… I swore to myself that I would use everything to be alive for you… After a lot of effort, I finally was regaining the control of my body and it was when I finally wake up yesterday…”  
  
He cupped her cheeks endearingly again as he looked deeply in her eyes:  
  
“Fany… you were the first thing I wanted to see when I awoken and I swear… I could listen and see your broken semblance whenever I was unconscious. I knew I couldn’t give up on you… and on us. It was when even if I should stay on my bed recovering myself, I needed to see you more than anything in this world and tell you that I didn’t gave up yet and… I love you so much to let you go… I will never give up of you… never again.”  
  
Feeling her heart fluttering and alive like she never felt before, Tiffany smile again after the incident and wrapped her arms around his neck as she whispered lovingly against his face:  
  
“Me too… no words can describe how grateful I am for have you again with me… I love you… always.”  
  
Smiling to each other lovingly, he reached her chin and finally pulled for a round of warm and passionate kisses. That night, they were finally able to sleep with a smile in their faces and feeling of relief and love in their hearts as they always did when sleeping in the other’s arms.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
One week later, Jess and Tiffany finally were discharged from the hospital, fully recovered. Both of them, Jessi’s mom and their friends were able to finally leave Jeju’s island. Taking a huge ship back to Seoul, the couple was more happy than ever; while their friends were messing with them due their cheesiness, Tiffany and Jessi took the opportunity to tease them as well since now, Taeyeon found herself blushing when she stole some glances of a smiling HeeChul and, Sooyoung blushed widely when Siwon reached her hand and gave a light squeeze, earning a smile from the tall and tanned girl. Yes, it looks like JeTi won’t be the only couple around here…  
  
Back to the present, Mrs. Jung found herself incredibly enchanted by Tiffany’s personality. They passed a good part talking like if they were mother and daughter. Mrs. Jung found out that this bright, easy-going, kind and very caring girl was indeed perfect to her son. Totally approving their relationship, she knew that Tiffany was like a daughter that she never had. To Tiffany it wasn’t different, for her Mrs. Jung was amazing as Jessi once had described to her; the older woman was very gentle, apparently cold, yet extremely warm inside… just like her dear Jessi. It was when she realized that she was really blessed that now she gained only one, but two important persons in her life, much more when Mrs. Jung treated like if she was her daughter… what an amazing feeling.  
  
However, Jessi observed the two women that he loved chatting happily and unconsciously a smile formed in his lips. He was fascinated with the sight, although he was with his blank face; yet, he only snapped from his thoughts when he felt the two ladies smiling in front of him. Mrs. Jung smiled to her ‘children’ and took Tiffany’s hand and placed on Jess’s ones. The couple smiled to her gently as she spoke warmly with a kind smile:  
  
“I think I stole her for too much time… I will let you two together now.”  
  
Jess flashed a warm smile as he used his free arm to reach his mom’s hand and pulled her for a warm hug. Tiffany smiled heartily due the sight since she knew how much his mother means to him. Once they parted, Mrs. Jung cupped Jesse’s and Tiffany’s cheek and whispered:  
  
“You will never found someone like her… so you better not let this one escape, understood? And you too, Tiffany,”  
  
“Of course, mom. I will never give up on her… she is mine.”  
  
Tiffany blushed to his words and answered coyly while she nodded:  
  
“Neither do I. I won’t give up on Jessi, Mrs. Ju--- I mean mom! \*chuckles\*”  
  
Mrs. Jung smiled when Tiffany called her mom as she ordered. The young girl found herself completely comfortable calling her as well. However, letting them enjoy their time together, Mrs. Jung smiled to them for the last time and turn around, walking away from their sight. Alone, they quickly exchanged some lovingly glances as they were cuddled into the other’s embrace. Yet, Tiffany leaned on the ship’s front gratings; Jess’s arms were wrapped around her waist as he placed his chin above her right shoulder, occasionally planting some soft kisses in her neck and nuzzling gently while inhaling her sweet scent. Tiffany smiled in glee and felt the hair of her neck stood up as shivers run by her spine once she received all his kisses. Placing her hands on top of his, she tilted her head to the side, leaning on his as they watched the sunset together, just like a scene of a romantic movie.  
  
However, out of sudden, Jess face palmed himself and slapped his own forehead, whispering loudly:  
  
“Oh my God! I can’t believe I forget it!”  
  
He abruptly broke the hug and stared at Tiffany with wide eyes. Confused by his sudden reaction, Tiffany creased her eyebrows in confusion and rested her hand on his cheek as she asked in concern:  
  
“What’s wrong, Jessi?!”  
  
He looked back to her and shook his head as he explains, still in shock:  
  
“Oh my God, I can’t believe I forgot to look for my master’s granddaughter! Aish… he is going to be mad at me.”  
  
Feeling curious, Tiffany raised an eyebrow and crossed her arms as she asked carefully:  
  
“Hmm Jessi… what is your master name?” Confused by her question, Jesse answered nonchalantly:  
  
“Oh it’s Master Lee, Jang Lee.”  
  
“You mean… Master Hwan Jang Lee?”  
  
Jesse creased his browns in confusion as he asked: “How did you know?”  
  
Slowly, a knowing smile formed into Tiffany’s lips as she placed her hands on Jesse’s shoulders and whispered truthfully:  
  
“Because… I am his granddaughter.”  
  
With his eyes widened, Jesse gasped in surprise as he started to sputter the words:  
  
“Bu-but how you and I – well but, err… but your name isn’t Tiffany Hwang?”  
  
Tiffany chuckles to see Jesse’s stupefied form and explained as she shrugs her shoulders:  
  
“Actually… my name it’s Hwang Lee Tiffany… I’m sorry for tell you this now, Jessi…”  
  
She whispered as she cupped the confused guy’s cheek gingerly and using a face of a lost puppy. Jesse only managed to answer:  
  
“Oh… b-but wait a minute… did you knew all this time?”  
  
Tiffany chuckles nervously and scratched the back of her head. Yet, she let a big sigh as she explains:  
  
“Actually, I only discovered when we were talking about ourselves and once you said about your master… I realized the similarities, but after some days that I finally had sure. Please, forgive me to not tell you sooner, Jessi.”  
  
Feeling worried since her boyfriend didn’t opened his mouth to speak a word, Tiffany was cut when she was about to ask again. She looked back to Jessi and saw a silly grin in his face and she felt relieved. He shook his head and wrapped his arms around her waist and whispered gingerly to her:  
  
“Everything makes sense now…”  
  
Tiffany cutely tilted her head to the side and asked with her browns creased: “How come?”  
  
Jesse simply chuckles and tightened the grip around her as he tenderly nuzzled his nose with her into an Eskimo kiss. Even blushing due his caring touches, she waited for his answer; however, he kissed her forehead and looked at her eyes lovingly as he simply answers, remembering his master’s remark:  
  
“Now I understand why he told me that… whenever it come a unique opportunity… I shouldn’t let slip away of my hands…”  
  
He gingerly cupped Tiffany’s face and whispered lovingly as he saw her blushing and her eyes shining:  
  
“You are my opportunity… I took the chance and I will not let you slip away from my hands.”  
  
Finally understanding, she smiled and traveled her hand on his neck and rested on his cheek. Staring each other with love, she caressed his nape neck and let their foreheads touch as he embraced her caringly and whispered while closing his eyes:  
  
“I’m glad to know that you were the one that I was looking all this time… my missing half.”  
  
“My place would it be always with you, in your arms... Jessi…”  
  
With that, they stood at the other’s embrace as they looked back to the sunset. Embracing from back again, Jesse kept kissing her neck and smiling; but he becomes stunned when Tiffany turned her head to him and eye-smiled brightly. Yet, her expression became serious when she surprised him when she planted a lovingly and shy kiss in his lips. It didn’t took too much to deepened their kiss, both of them smiled and let the heat run over their bodies after know that they had always belonged to each other.

*End of the 1st Part.*

**Final Chapter (Part 2)**

After Jesse, Tiffany and Mrs. Jung went to Master Lee’s Dojo, the latter was pleasantly surprised to see everyone safe and much more to see that Mrs. Jung was alive. Tiffany run to his encounter and gave a tight hug in her grandfather, it was so long the last time she saw him.  
  
“Grangpa!” Master Lee smiled warmly as he brushed her hair gently, feeling really happy to see her dear granddaughter again. Certainly, it was a touching and happy moment for all of them. Yet, while watching the scene, Jesse’s smile dropped slowly as he remembered a fact… When he asked to Tiffany why she entered on the Duel, it was because she wanted the money to help her with her grandfather’s health. Thank God everyone was fine, yet, Jesse recalled well that his master healthy conditions weren’t very promising…  
  
Sighing deeply, he silently walk away for the warm reunion. Now, alone in his room, he took a deep breath and whispered with his eyes closed: “What should I do now? God… help me…”  
  
And if like the Heavens heard his prayers, he heard someone calling him in front of the dojo:  
  
“Mister Jung! Are you home?”  
  
Jessi widened his eyes and rushed to the front door as Tiffany, his mom and master looking at him quizzically. He shrugs his shoulders and opened the door to see a man wearing a black tux and sunglasses; the man bowed respectfully to the other ones as he spoke with Jesse:  
  
“Are you Mister Jung?”  
  
Jesse confusedly looked to ‘his family’ and they motioned him to answer; back to the man in tux, he raised his brown and answered politely:  
  
“Yes, it’s me. There is anything I could help you, mister…?”  
  
“Kang. But this isn’t important. Well, I guess you must be asking yourself why I am here.”  
  
The man a.k.a Kang removed a fancy envelop from his jacket and delivered at Jesse’s hands. The latter looked at the object confusedly and asked:  
  
“What is this?”  
  
Kang chuckles and removed his glasses as he simply answers:  
  
“Mister Jung, we were looking for you for days and I must tell you that it wasn’t an easy task to find you, well… without more delay, I, Kang member of the Duel’s staff hand you, the winner of the Duel Tournament prize… of 100.000.000,00 won. Congratulations, Mister Jung.”  
  
Everyone, including Jesse gasped in shock with the news. He hurriedly ripped the envelope and saw a golden check showing the prize’s value. He couldn’t believe it, it was really here, it was too good to be true. Although he was really happy to see this check, he couldn’t help to feel worried as he asked carefully, trying to calm himself due the bursting news:  
  
“Is this for real? I mean… who send you… honestly?”  
  
Kang chuckles again and shook his head as he explains while waving his hand dismissively:  
  
“Yes, Mister Jung. There are no secrets, since you won the tournament, you earned the prize justly. But since you are a little worried…”  
  
He stopped briefly as he slowly turn around to leave, before Jesse could stop him, Kang turn around and smiled as he nodded his head answering:  
  
“Don’t worry, I believe Miss Narsha, the host of the Duel made the right choice giving you this prize… as I said before, you really deserved.”  
  
Now, Jesse was agape again as he quickly turn around and saw Tiffany equally shocked as him. He creased his eyebrows in confusion and muttered doubtfully:  
  
“Narsha…”  
  
When he was about to ask Kang again about this was the truth, he shot his head up only to see no one in front of him, Kang simply disappeared without let any trace. Starting to feel more relieved, Jesse finally smiled as he nodded to no one and spoke truthfully:  
  
“Thank you…”  
  
With that, he turns around to find his family looking back at him with proud smile in their faces. Soon, he joined to them and they celebrated the news. Everything was falling in the right place… finally.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
With the prize in his hands, Jess didn’t think twice to deliver in Tiffany’s hands knowing that she held a noble objective, which was the same of his. However, although she was deeply touched by his action, she refused to accept the whole amount; she only wanted the amount necessary for her grandfather’s surgery.  
  
Weeks later, Master Lee passed through a heart surgery and everything was a success. Now, feeling brand new, Jessi offered the money to Master Lee start a new fight academy and honor the dojo where he grew up. Master Lee of course, felt touched with his decision, however like Tiffany, he only agree if Jesse would it be the main teacher of the fight academy and he would receive the major part of the academy’s profits. Not even one day after they opened a brand new dojo, students all over the world inscribed themselves gladly after know that Jesse was one of the teacher and also, to know Jesse’s master. It wasn’t a big surprise since all students saw Jesse’s skills and strength on the Duel; they were in awe also due his discipline.  
  
With the ‘business’ going so well, Master Lee, Jesse and Tiffany were always busy teaching in their academy, it was funny that even SooYoung, TaeYeon, HeeChul and SiWon decided to sign up as well. Yet, even after a tiring training, Jesse always managed to train his personal and favorite student since the latter whined cutely claiming that they weren’t able to go on with their training. He chuckles with this memory and more than happy, he decided to comply as he kept his training with Tiffany.  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
Six months passed and Jessi knew that it was time, he knew that he didn’t want to live far from Tiffany; so getting advices from his mom, the latter become truly delighted to know her son’s intentions.  
  
At the nightfall, Jesse and Tiffany still were ‘training’ on the dojo yard. They didn’t bother to stay up until late since after their training or meanwhile…it did make difference, but they would end up reaching each other for a warm embrace and rounds of passionate kisses. This night wouldn’t be very different, after they bodies were drenched in sweat due their hard training with new moves, Tiffany reluctantly left Jesse to take a shower, but not before to plant a sweet kiss in his lips and making the poor guy stunned.  
  
After both of them showered themselves, Jesse was waiting Tiffany on the same spot where they were training. A wide smile formed when Tiffany was just wearing casual clothes, yet she looked beautiful and perfect to his eyes. To Tiffany’s side was the same, even Jessi wearing simple jeans and a plain white shirt, her heart always doubled the pace with the sight with him, much more when we was wearing the shirt she loves which was showing very clearly his assets and his strong physic. He flashed a gorgeous smile as he extended his right hand waiting for her to accept it.  
  
Smiling brightly, she happily jumped from the stairs letting her floral dress flow in the air delicately. Jessi smiled at her child like figure and intertwined their fingers together as she cutely asks:  
  
“So … where are we going?”  
  
He smiled and poked her cheek teasingly as she pouted:  
  
“Soon you will know.”  
  
He didn’t resist as he kissed her cheek and both of the blushed shyly. Looking to the other’s eyes, their smile only widened as they held the other’s hand tight:  
  
“Let’s go.”  
  
She nodded with a bright smile and together they walked to their destiny. After brief minutes, Tiffany realized that once again, they were inside of a cozy forest around the dojo. She didn’t want to look annoying, but she really wanted to know where Jessi was taking her. When she was about to ask, he stopped suddenly and she almost tripped; quickly grabbing her in his arms, he asked worriedly:  
  
“Are you okay?” She could swear that she melted on the moment he wrapped his arms around her instinctively. Nodding a little since she felt a lump in her throat, Jesse smiled in relief as he pulled himself from her and asked, still holding her hand:  
  
“Ready?”  
  
She nodded with a smile, so out of a sudden, Jesse pulled a huge leaf of their way and she was stunned. Before them, there was a clear view of Seoul, since they were in some kind of hill; the landscape was beautiful, much more since she could see the beauty of the nature blending with the urban environment. But her surprises didn’t stopped right here, once she looked around, she gasped again to see a red blanket on the floor with two candlelit atop the fabric and a basket emitting a delicious scent. Looking back to Jessi in awe, she felt her heart lap when he smiled shyly with his head down as he asked gently:  
  
“Ermm… did you like it? I know it’s nothing fancy, but…”  
  
Enchanted with the sight of the caring boy before her, Tiffany couldn’t deny that Jessi always know a way to make her love him much more than she already did. Unable to answer in words, she surprised the boy who was fidgeting his fingers timidly with a sudden gentle kiss in his lips. He widened his eyes, yet closed slowly as he let himself drown in her lips. Once they parted, she whispered lovingly, feeling genuinely touched:  
  
“Thank you, Jessi. I love it.”  
  
Flashing a marvelous smile, Jessi nodded and gingerly brought to the blanket as he excitedly speaks:  
  
“Let’s go then!”  
  
He first seated on the smooth fabric and extends his hands to help her to sit as well. Once they found themselves comfortable, he started to remove the bowls and the foods inside the basket. Giving a meal to Tiffany, he removed the lid and become happy to see Tiffany’s eyes shining when she beamed with her booming voice:  
  
“Oh my God! I was craving for your naengmyun!”  
  
He chuckles at her answer and was flattered when she started to dig on the delicious meal. He even forgot to feed himself while watching her eating so happily; watch her it was one of his favorite’s hobbies and he didn’t even get tired. However, noting eyes on her, Tiffany blushed to Jessi staring at her caringly; yet worried that he still didn’t ate, she gladly took an amount of the delicious noodles with her sticks and cooed gently:  
  
“Jessi, ahhhh~~~~”  
  
He blushed and complied, smiling a little as she placed the food in his mouth. After that, they found more amusing feed themselves than alone, they kept playing and talking with each other, totally immersed in their own world. After sometime, when their meals finished; the couple was lying on the blanket while watching the stars. Tiffany was with her head on Jesse’s right shoulder as her fingertips caressed his chest delicately, giving butterflies in their stomach due the feeling. He was with his right arm around her while he caressed her back tenderly and his left one thumbed her bare shoulder caringly. She felt herself incredible warm and comfortable to be at his arms, listening the beatings of his heart and rise and fall of his chest while watching the stars, it was everything that both of them ever wanted. However, breaking the silence, Jesse whispered gingerly, never stopping his caresses:  
  
“You know… you are the first person that I bring here.”  
  
Surprised, Tiffany slightly pulled herself from his arms to take a better view of his face. He broke the gaze of the starts to look to his most bright star in front of him. A small grin formed in his lips when she creased her brows and asked curiously:  
  
“How come?” He chuckles slightly and let his right hand wander by her shoulder to curl on her brown and smooth locks:  
  
“This place it’s very important to me and no one know the existence, I always used to come here when I was a kid until now. I don’t know why, but whenever I felt myself bothered or sad with something, this place gives me peace and now… I am sharing this with you. But whenever I felt those bad feelings, I don’t need a place to bring peace and happiness to my heart… I just need you…”  
  
Touched by his words, Tiffany felt herself tearing as she smiled weakly, still feeling flattered, honored and loved with his confession. Unconsciously, her hands cupped his cheeks gingerly as she whispered softly:  
  
“I’m really happy to know that… and I promise that I will always be here whenever you need me.”  
  
He smiled widely with her answer as one of his hands cupped her left cheek. She closed her eyes to feel his soft touch and her face started to get warm in return. The sight was beautiful, Jesse was in awe to see Tiffany’s face so close of his as her long brown hair was caressing his cheek softly. However, he decided to break the comfortable silence as he carefully seated making his girlfriend confused. Seeing her puzzled expression, Jesse nibbled his lower lip and spoke softly while looking at her eyes:  
  
“Well… since you promised that… I think it will be good if we formalize everything right?”  
  
Tiffany raised a brown in confusion as Jesse continues and grabbed her hand carefully. Taking a deep breath, he thumbed her hand and started:  
  
“Fany… every day with you… more I realize that there is no one in this world that I would want more than you. I look forward to make the rest of your life truthfully happy.”  
  
“But Jessi… you already are doing this…I couldn’t feel more than happy ever since you entered in my life.”   
  
Smiling at her words and her caress in his cheek, Jessi felt more confident to go on as he leaned in one knee. So taking another deep breath, he looked deeply and lovingly to her eyes as he continued:  
  
“You are my first love and I am sure that it will be the only one. And I just can imagine my future with you… so what I am really trying to say it’s…”  
  
He finally took a fancy black velvet box from his pocket and opened to reveal a beautiful silver ring with a diamond. Nervously, he asked while staring at Tiffany’s surprised form:  
  
“Hwang Lee Tiffany… will you marry me?”  
  
Seeing that she wasn’t answering for sometime, Jessi nibbled his lips nervously fearing for a possible rejection and when he was about to lower his head, he was shocked when he felt hot lips pressed against his own and arms tightly wrapped around his neck. His widened eyes started to close slowly as felt Tiffany’s kissing him passionately and cupping his cheek very fondly. He wrapped his arms around her waist, trapping her in his arms as they kept kissing each other. When the air of their lungs was dissipating, Tiffany abruptly broke the kiss and already was letting the tears roll by her cheek as she answered breathlessly:  
  
“Yes! Jessi, you silly, you know how much I was waiting for this?!”  
  
He smiled apologetically as he answered: “I’m sorry, honey I had to be sure if you want---!!”  
  
He was silenced again with a kiss at the point them both fell on the blanket with Tiffany’s beauty firmly straddled on his waist. His hands caressed her bare upper back gingerly as he felt her shivering in his touch; content with her reaction, now he was the one who broke the kiss as he quickly reached the ring and gingerly placed on her ringer finger. She looked to her new ring in awe and smiled brightly at him who smiled lovingly back to her, and they returned to their session. With hands traveling at the other bodies, Jessi felt his heart hammer loudly when he felt her soft and hot tongue grazing on his thin lips, quickly giving allowance, they deepened their kisses as their tongues rubbed and touched the other’s inner mouth.  
  
Moans escaped from their lips as their kisses were getting more passionate in each second. Out of sudden, they broke the kiss as Tiffany uttered breathlessly with her eyes closed:  
  
“I love you, Jessi.”  
  
He smiled brightly feeling his heart beating fast with her confession, so he cupped her cheeks and answered lovingly before pull her for another passionate kiss:  
  
“I love you, Fany… I always did and I always will.”  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
The ceremony was wonderful. Both friends and familiars were clapping their hands in delight when the now, the newlyweds were giving their first kiss as a married couple. Tiffany smiled between the kiss as she heard Sooyoung and Taeyeon whistling at them. Jess smiled as well while listening the entire ruckus; still he hugged his wife and deepened the kiss as she tightened the grip around his neck.  
  
Their party was great as well, much more when the part of Tiffany throws her bouquet to a crowned of ‘despaired women’. As much it could be difficult to believe, the bouquet simply fell on her blonde and shorty friend, Taeyeon. The latter was agape and flushed when Tiffany winked to her in understanding.  
  
After the great day finally has ended, Tiffany and Jesse went to the most unexpected place to their honeymoon… in that case, the place where they met… at Jeju’s island. The decision was made by both of them since even they passed most part of their lives were in danger, it was in that island. Yet, if it wasn’t because of the Duel, they wouldn’t met and fall in love with each other. Now, the place was completely changed, the island didn’t represent a threat to anyone since the place turned into a fancy resort.  
  
Back to our dear and cheesy couple, well… they enjoyed their visit at the island, remembering their first moments together. They passed the whole day exploring the entire island. Tiffany asked to Jessi if they could visit the waterfall that they went on the day before Jessi face the deceased Mister D. Complying his beloved wife wish, Tiffany was anxious to be sure about a thing and yes, she was right. Once they passed through the waterfall, the present of Jessi remains untouched after all this time, in that case… her replica.  
  
Then, looking back to her husband’s endearingly stares, Tiffany felt the most fortunate person on the Earth and she wanted to show him how much he meant to her. So feeling much confident, she persuades her husband that she wanted to come back to their suite on the hotel where they were lodged. Once they arrived in front of their room, just when Jessi opened the door and they entered, Tiffany surprised him when she pinned him on the door and whispered hotly against his ear, letting her lips graze on his earlobe:  
  
“Gotcha…”  
  
Before a shocked Jessi could answer, Tiffany already plunged her lips hungrily on his, letting her tongue brush teasingly in his thin lips while she deepened the kiss. She barely broke the kiss as she whispered breathlessly on his lips after remove his jacket, throwing on the floor hastily:  
  
“You don’t know how much I waited for this moment.”  
  
“Ti…Tiffany \*gasp\* thi-this is my first t-time… so I d-don’t have much exp---“  
  
“Shhh… don’t worry, I will guide you…”  
  
A breathless Tiffany silenced a worried Jessi who quickly changed his mind, feeling much more confident and aroused of have all Tiffany’s body pressed against his. It was impossible task to not be insane while feeling Tiffany’s hot lips nibbling his earlobe, neck and lips. Returning to their heated kiss, Tiffany was surprised, if you think that Jessi would stay motionless while his wife was clearly harassing him pleasantly…you are wrong. It didn’t take even 3 seconds to Jessi wake up from ‘his trance’ and change the game. Making Tiffany more surprise, Jesse returned the kiss with the same hungriness as he hastily turns around and pinned her on the wall. Parting of the kiss momentarily, he smiled to see Tiffany looked at him with half open eyes with an aroused semblance and cheeks flushed; so he whispers teasingly as his hand found a way under her blouse and rubbed her smooth skin gently. She moaned loudly in return feeling more aroused than ever, it was when Jesse leaned and muttered hotly against her neck:  
  
“You don’t have any idea… how much I wanted to take you on my arms like this…”  
  
He nuzzled on her neck and kissed her weak spot as she felt her legs giving in. Wrapping her arms around his neck, she moaned when he held her tightly and planted a trail of kisses to her collarbones, neck, chin and back to her lips. It was when he parted slightly and took a deep breath, finishing his words:  
  
“How much… I wanted to kiss you like this… and make you mine.”  
  
She reluctantly opened her eyes and cupped his cheeks as both of them were burning from inside out and the feeling was clearer in their eyes. Before close the gap between them, she whispered breathlessly:  
  
“So do it… make me… yours…”  
  
Receiving the sign both of them smiled to each other and started their session. While walking blindly to their kind sized bed, clothes were being discarded and falling on the ground. Now, with their bare bodies, Jessi managed to shower Tiffany with kisses as the latter moaned and fluttered her eyes in delight while shivering due his kisses. Back to her lips, their bodies intertwined into their love session as he lied her carefully on the bed and their kisses were getting more passionate and heated in every second.  
  
They were finally able to let the love lead the way as they surrenders to each other. Their body fit perfectly at the other’s body, this moment was much better than they imagine it; the way Tiffany craved her nails on her Jessi’s back and bit her lips to contain her moans or how amazing was when Jesse felt Tiffany’s skin and body brushing against his own. Sweat drenched their bodies due their session and hours later once they were over, they rested at the other’s warm arms.  
  
Jessi looked down to his angel lying on his chest and caressed her bare back gently while she placed her hand on his bare chest. They intertwined their fingers slowly, and soon, Tiffany raised her face to look to her beloved, once their stare met, a beautiful smile formed in their lips as their eyes shone in love. Their skins still were glistening due their sweat, but they didn’t care; Jesse cupped Tiffany’s cheek gingerly, removing a strand of hair of her chin as she eye-smiled at him. Unable to control themselves, they leaned and pressed their lips against each other lovingly. Jesse entangled his hand on her dark brown hair as they tilted their head to the side so they could kiss each other fully into their slow and sensuous kiss.  
  
When they parted feeling breathless, their smile only widened as they uttered at the same time, the same meaningful confession:  
  
“I love you.”  
  
After that, they leaned and kissed each other again, finally cuddling at the other’s embrace and sleeping peacefully at their beloved’s amorous arms. Now, everything was complete to their lives… well… almost…  
  
-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-\*-  
  
*[Seven years later]*  
  
“Appa! She froze my food again!” A black haired boy mumbled sulkily as he crossed his arms and pouted using his plump lips. The ‘appa’ looked to the culprit and narrowed his eyes as he called the girl who was ready to make her escape:  
  
“MiYeon… what you did with your brother again?”  
  
The little girl with a light brown hair gave an ice glare to her so called brother and muttered while rolling her eyes:  
  
“But he started appa! Jin burned my cookies!”  
  
“And you did the same thing, huh? Now you too come here.”  
  
The father ordered as the twins gulped and looked up to see their father’s ice glare. He crossed his arms and softened his eyes when he saw both children wearing their puppy look, something that they learned with their mom. So rolling his eyes, he sighs deeply and ordered:  
  
“You two apologize to each other… N.O.W.”  
  
The kids nibbled their lips nervously, yet they look to each other and sighed deeply. Soon, they bowed their heads and muttered:  
  
“I’m sorry, Jin.”  
  
“I’m sorry too, Mi Yeon.”  
  
Once the kids apologized to each other, the boy eye-smiled to his sister and extended his hand, saying:  
  
“Wanna play?”  
  
She flashed an awkward, yet cute smile and nodded happily:  
  
“Let’s go!”  
  
While the kids were playing and training on the dojo’s yard, the father looked to his children in awe, feeling proud to have such amazing kids with the woman he loved. Meanwhile, a pair of warm arms encircled his waist and a face burrows on his back gently. Recognizing the perfumed and his favorite scent, he smiled when a soft voice spoke close to his neck:  
  
“You are a great appa, Jessi…”  
  
He smiled and slowly turns around to see his wife; she eye-smiled at him and didn’t resist as he cupped her cheeks gently and touched her forehead with his, whispering:  
  
“It’s because you are an amazing mom as well.”  
  
He placed a lovingly kiss in her lips and smiled heartily when he saw the bumpy tummy of his wife moving. He kneeled on the floor and placed his ear on Tiffany’s protuberant tummy as he caressed tenderly, asking in awe:  
  
“I guess the baby its happy right… Hey, baby, do you love daddy, right?” Tiffany smiled lovingly and brushed Jesse’s brown hair tenderly. Out of sudden, the baby kicked and they laughed in surprise as Jesse excitedly asked to Tiffany:  
  
“Do you think that our baby will love me?”  
  
Tiffany chuckles at his child look and lowered her head slightly as she nodded with a bright smile:  
  
“Yes, I think SHE will love you a lot…”  
  
Suddenly a wide smile formed in his lips as he hugged his wife’s waist, asking really joyfully:  
  
“It’s a girl?! Oh my God! This is great! Awww I will have another baby girl beautiful as you!”  
  
He couldn’t contain himself as he stands up and hugged his wife tight, yet carefully. She could only laugh at his hyper state. So, once they parted, they looked to each other and soon, a smile formed in their lips as they leaned and kissed the other’s lips lovingly. Tiffany’s hand rested on his shoulders and Jessi, well, with one arm he wrapped around her waist and the other one, he placed on her bumpy belly, occasionally caressing the bump. Once they parted, feeling the sparkles in their eyes, Jessi clasped her chin once again and kissed her lips passionately.  
  
Breaking the kiss slowly, they uttered an “I love you” to each other and smiled widely. However, they turn around to see their kids playing… well, more throwing ice and fireballs against each other and laughing loudly due their fun. So, Jessi wrapped his arms around Tiffany’s waist and rested in her bumpy tummy, the latter enveloped his hands with her warm ones and they stood into their comfortable silence. Suddenly, Tiffany looked to her side and a smirk crept in her lips to see Jessi with his eyes closed and a smile in his face. She couldn’t help to feel curious as she asks softly:  
  
“What are you thinking?”  
  
Jesse only widened his smile and answered with his eyes still closed, after exhale hot air of his nose in Tiffany’s neck:  
  
“In my whole life… I always had plans for me… I dreamed to be strong once I grow old, and create a family that I longed for so much time…”  
  
Feeling curious, Tiffany smiled again and whispered:  
  
“So… this was what you wished for?”  
  
Jesse’s smile disappeared as his face become serious and he answered: “No.”  
  
Tiffany was about to feel confused, but when Jesse opened his eyes and caressed her bumpy belly; he gave to her his most bright smile as he confessed with his eyes full of love:  
  
“This is much more than I ever imagined.”  
  
Touched and satisfied with his answer, Tiffany felt herself tearing up and pulling him for a lovingly kiss. They continued their passionate kiss, with their hearts filled with love, the same love they felt seven years ago and stay alive as if they confessed to each other yesterday. So, as Tiffany promised once to Mrs. Jung, she was more than happy to fulfill her vow… which was love Jessi much more day by day until the end of their days as Jessi loved her with her soul and never left her again.  
  
*"****Fire*** *and* ***Ice*** *can be totally polar opposites for common people, but to* ***Jessi*** *and* ***Tiffany****… this means…* ***love.****"*  
  
  
  
  
**FIN**